





Digitized by the Internet Archive in 2007 with funding from Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/freewillforeknow00tuckiala



FREEWILL, FOREKNOWLEDGE, AND FATE. FRAGMENT. By EDWARD SEARCH, Efq;

Unde hæc eft Fatis avolfa Voluntas. LUCRET.

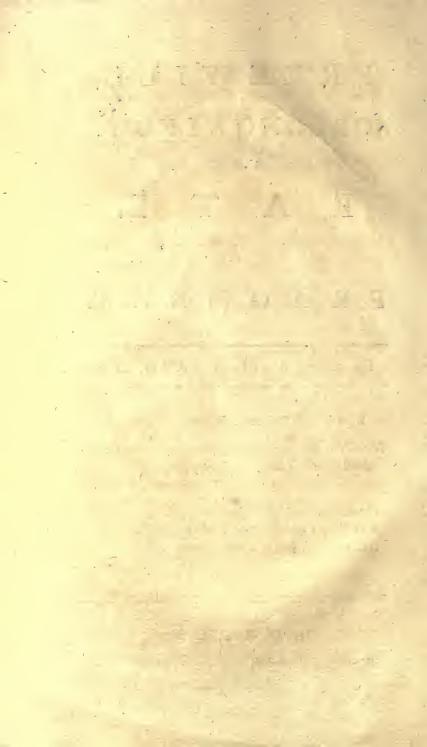
Hunc Naturam vocas, Fatum, Fortunam : onnia ejufdem Dei nomina funt, varie utentis fua potestate. SENECA de Benef.

Others reafon'd high of Knowledge, Fate, and Will; Fixt Fate, Freewill, Foreknowledge abfolute, And found no end, in wandring mazes loft.

MILTON.

LONDON:

Printed for R. and J. DOSDIEY, 40 Pall-Mall-M DCCLXHI.



The READER.

TO

XXXX N revisiting Alma Mater Oxoni-O 🚆 enfis after a long absence, among many noble edifices entirely *** new to me, I observed an elegant range of chambers at Magdalen, on either end of which there projected two rows of rough stones from top to bottom ready to fasten in with future walls that might be run up against them; and chimnies were worked between for the accommodation of future chambers that might hereafter rife out of the adjacent ground. But as the faid adjacent ground was fmoothed into a neat parterre, and I faw no preparation for further erections, I could look upon the projector as having defigned only to exhibit the fragment of a building.

Being at St. Mary's one Sunday, I heard a learned and excellent difcourfe on three

A 2

1051

out

out of five fub-divisions of the fecond head of a treatife in defence of the Protestant Cause. I was told the first head had been delivered three years before, and it might probably come to the Preacher's turn to give the two remaining fub-divisions about three years hence: so confidering how fluctuating a body the congregation confisted of, and supposing the Preacher knew their taste, I concluded it customary to present them with the fragment of a Differtation.

Every body knows the prodigious demand for Magazines, which are little elfe than bundles of various and difcordant fragments; and compositions of all kinds, not excepting Dictionaries, find greater vent when broken into numbers, than when delivered entire.

Having fuch precedents, as well of learned as fimple, to keep me in countenance, I need no farther apology for exhibiting a Fragment to public view; especially fince it can scarce be called so, when confidered in itself: for I have purfued my subject as thoroughly as I was able, and brought it to a conclusion; fo that

that I flatter myfelf it will appear rent and torn only with refpect to certain ftrings of connection and allufions bearing a reference to other matters of my production, which I keep ftill in referve. Neverthelefs it will be expected that I fhould give fome more particular account of my dealing out this piece of a performance, than barely the allowablenefs of fo doing, after the example of other people.

The Searches, from whom I claim to be descended, were a very ancient family, as old almost as the time when curiofity first began to prevail in the world. But as this quality, while left to follow its natural bent, would catch indifferently at every thing novel or engaging, of what kind foever, our line have always endeavoured to confine it to objects from whence fomething useful might be gathered, either for. improving the knowledge or promoting the fervice of mankind. But as many of us have but moderate capacities, we often labour to little purpose, and fail of producing the good expected from our endeavours; yet we still continue those endeavours, like other Projectors, in hopes

A 3

of

of better fuccefs by and by, or for the chance that what little we produce may occafion others to improve upon it, and fo be made to yield better fruits when cultivated by abler hands. But there is one benefit we cannot well fail of, the having employment for our time, together with the foothing fatisfaction of knowing that our aim is justifiable, and of being engaged perpetually in purfuit of fomething that carries the appearance of use and importance. For perfeverance and good intention are characteristics of the Searches, and direct them feverally to those courses of enquiry wherein their particular turn of mind or opportunities render them most likely to proceed with effect.

It has been my fortune, or my humour, to lay out much of my thoughts upon moral Philofophy, and the rules of Pruduce for the government of our conduct, which I find generally made to confift of detached tenets or maxims varioufly underftood, having little dependance upon each other, but oftentimes appearing to clash; from whence great disputes and perplexities unavoidably ensue. For men proceed

ceed upon different principles, which they feverally efteem felf-evident, and therefore will not fuffer them to be questioned. But it feems to me, that many things are received as principles, which are not truly fuch, but deductions from fomething elfe; tho' men efteem them felf-evident, as having forgotten the inducements recommending them to their reception, or having imbibed them from their teachers or companions, without knowing of any other original they ever had. Therefore I conceived it might be expedient to take our principles themfelves under examination, not with defign to overthrow them, for they may be true as conclusions, though not felf-evident as principles, but in order to trace them down to the foundations whereon they fland. And it foon appeared that human underftanding can build fecurely on no other foundation than experience and observation of ourfelves, and that part of nature lying within our cognizance; nor can any abftract reasonings be depended upon which do not ground ultimately upon that bottom.

A 4

Under '

Under this perfuafion I fet myfelf carefully to confider the nature of the mind, her manner of acting in the common occurrencies of life, the fources of good and evil ordinarily befalling her, what Ideas naturally occur from contemplation of things external, and what conclusions might be drawn from thence for regulating as well our theory as our practice. For I conceived, that if fomething of a fystem could be formed upon this bafis, it must carry a mutual dependance in all its parts, which would contribute, fo far as it extended, to render our opinions confistent and uniform : becaufe our premifes being taken from common experience of things obvious to every body's obfervation, whatever could be plainly deduced from thence must meet with every body's approbation; and if we could be brought to try our feveral notions by that touchstone, and model them according to that standard, it must tend towards a general reconcilement; an object more fuitable to my tafte than opposition or victory.

Therefore without interesting myself in the disputes which have divided the world,

I

I endeavoured to firike out what lights I could from experience, without prejudice or partiality, yet with fuch deference to the opinions of others before me, as to prefume them well grounded, until I feemed clearly to difcern wherein the error lay; and rather defirous of putting fuch confiruction upon them as appeared reafonable, than forward to reject them.

This attempt has furnished me more employment than I imagined at first fetting out; for I found, in the progress of my enquiries, that one difcovery gave birth to another, that to a third, and fo on to a length I could fcarce have thought capable of being traced out, much lefs that I should be fo lucky as to trace it. And I began to fear, that what with unavoidable avocations, what with my natural flownefs, and fome bodily infirmities rendering me unfit for long and hard labour, the work I have drawn upon my hands, though not likely to prove very voluminous, was more than could be compleated while I have ftrength and fpirits to go through it. This made me think of giving out what I had gotten ready, without staying until the whole were

ix

were finished, had I judged it fafe or prudent fo to do. But as I have endeavoured all along to proceed with a perfect freedom, and at the fame time to avoid a licentioufnefs or wantonnefs of thought, my freedom has led me to maintain fome pofitions which might give offence, or be thought of dangerous confequence: and tho' when it fhall be feen what ufe I fhall make of them, I truft they will not only be found innocent, but to corroborate thofe received opinions they feem at first fight to fubvert; yet my caution with-holds me from uttering any thing that might appear poifonous, until I had prepared the antidote.

For truths are not to be fpoken at all times indifcriminately; becaufe the moft ufeful of them ftanding fometimes connected in men's minds with error, it would do hurt to undeceive them in the latter, without having provided means of diffolving the connection.

The little Differtation here prefented to view feemed the only part of my productions proper to be ventured abroad alone, as being lefs complicated than others with the reft, and not fo much a new fuper-

superstructure raised upon grounds before laid down, which when detached from its foundation might appear like a caftle in the air, as a clearing the way for other buildings. For it contains no more than an attempt to refcue the doctrine of univerfal Providence, as maintained in the preceding chapter, from an objection ordinarily occurring against it, as if it fubverted human liberty, by leaving us nothing in our power to do: an attempt which furely cannot give offence to the most fcrupulous, whether Divine or Philosopher. And yet I forefee that fome exceptionable confequences may be drawn from this. doctrine in the latitude whereto it is here extended; but they will probably be overlooked, by those especially whom they might be most likely to stagger; therefore I shall not be fo indifcreet as to point them out, until in my further progrefs I shall have gotten matters ready for obviating them.

It would be departing from the honefty and ingenuoufnefs of the Searches to deny, that perhaps the true reafon of my exhibiting a part of my face in open view may be no other

other than an impatience of appearing in print, and reviewing my labours in a fairer character than I can give them with my own fcribbling hand. But if this be my motive, it is more than I know myfelf; for it is not uncommon with every body for imagination to fuggeft folid and fubftantial reafons in fupport of any thing they have a mind to; and fuch are not wanting, which to my thinking determine me upon the prefent occafion.

For by fubmitting this fpecimen to the judgement of any who shall think it worth his perufal, I may receive fome admonitions for my conduct in proceeding further. A man is no competent judge of his own performances; for being the product of his own thoughts, they must tally exactly with his ways of thinking; which upon revifal may give them a face of neatnefs and proportion they will not carry in the eyes of other people: fo that after all his care to make his arguments connected and compact, others may find them abounding in gaps and fuperfluities; the explanations he gives as clear and full may be thought obfcure and imperfect by them; obfervations that

that look firiking and appofite to him, they. may pronounce flat and unavailing; and matters he judges momentous, may to them appear triffing. Nor can one fafely depend upon the judgement of intimates; for however impartial and difcerning they may be, still the knowledge of the perfon raifes a curiofity upon what he produces, which will keep up their attention in places where' a stranger might have fallen asleep : besides that there is always fome fimilitude in the. way of thinking between perfons who converse often together. Therefore whatever precautions one may take at home, there is no knowing how one may be received in public without making the trial.

My manner of handling the fubjects I treat of is what I am most fuspicious of reprehension upon; for they being generally unentertaining and dry, I have endeavoured to embellish them with a diversity of stile, in order to relieve the Reader, and keep his attention awake; intermingling fometimes poetical and rhetorical figures, fometimes familiar and vulgar images among abstrufe speculations; fometimes giving the reins to a playful fancy in the transitions, feverally intro-

introducing them; and fometimes talking to my Reader as if we were fitting together over a bottle. In these particulars I am willing to fland under correction, as not knowing myfelf whether all this be an agreeable variety or a motley mixture; whether an ornament fetting off the fubftance, or a disfigurement rendering it hideous.

Whatever information I can pick up, either with respect to matter or form, will not be utterly loft upon me; for though I cannot promife to work a thorough reformation, it being difficult to depart from a track one has long habituated one's felf to, and that enthulialm fometimes poffeffing a writer not lying always under controul; vet neither am I of a temper to perfift obftinately in a fault which I find in my power to mend.

As for gaining applause for my performances, it is what I neither expect nor defire; for the Searches were never remarkable for a fondness of fame; the point they constantly drove at was to fecure a felfapprobation in the justness of their undertakings, and of the measures they took to purfue

pursue them; but being diffident of themfelves, they could never poffefs this folace compleatly, until they had it confirmed to them by the fanction of others. I shall think it fufficient encomium, if any body shall fay the fame of me as Horace did of Lucilius, that when he run incorrect, yet therewas fomething you would think well worth your while to pick up: and whether this fomething can be found or no, I shall reap an advantage from the difcovery either way. For if I have been labouring all this while to no purpose, it will be expedient for me to know it. I shall then be delivered from the fatigue of toiling any longer after an ignis fatuus, a mere notion of being important without the reality: I shall have more time to fpare for innocent amufements, and may enter into them with a quiet confcience, upon being convinced of an unfitnefs for things useful. For I am luckily placed in a fituation that binds me down to no particular tafk; I may either work or play, as I fee proper; and my life would pass more pleafurably in the latter, could I once lay afide the thought of obligation to the former. On the other hand, fhould that Some-

Something be found in the little fample I deal out, which might prove of fervice to any body towards clearing up his doubts, or caffing a light upon matters he judges of fome moment, it will raife a hope and alacrity that will fupport me under my future labours, and enable me to purfue them more effectually; and may acquit me of fome omiffions in private life, which feem to call for an excufe.

For my friends and neighbours find it difficult to draw me out of my retirement, or get me to confort among them when near, or correspond with them when distant: which I am apprehensive they may ascribe to an unfociable fulleness of. temper, or a felfish fondness for idle speculations, in difregard of what is owing to perfons around me, though they are more polite and good-natured than to charge me openly with these blemishes. Now I have too great a value and defire of their good opinion to reft eafy under the thoughts of having forfeited it : therefore am willing to fhow them that I do not fit idle while retired within myfelf, affuring them at the fame time that I am detained in my hermitage

mitage by fomething bearing the air of bufinels and obligation, and that it did not appear to me the indulgence of an unfociable humour to be employed in refearches after what might prove beneficial to fociety. But if I should obtain a testimonial from any body who has in anywife received benefit from my speculations, or shall pronounce them worth the pains I have taken in purfuing them, this will avail me more than any protestations of mine; because the best intentions perfisted in without producing fome good effect, while they justify the heart cast a slur upon the understanding. And least it should be thought that, the little I have to fhew might be difpatched at leifure hours, without interruption to other engagements; I beg leave to observe, that a great deal more is requisite to be done than appears to fuch as have not experienced it; for though I have endeavoured as far as in me lies to attain an eafy manner of conveying my thoughts, yet we have it upon Mr. Addison's authority, that there is a great difference between eafy writing, and what any one may eafily write, especially in handling such knotty b **fubjects**

XVII

fubjects as I have fallen upon. I am fure it has cost me infinite pains to fave pains to my Reader; and I have been forced to run over in my thoughts as much as would fill ten sheets, before I could furnish out a fingle one in a manner that might afford a tolerable expectation of being fatisfactory to him. Add to this, that the weakness of my fpirits difables me from performing great matters at a fitting; but I must do my work by fnatches, morning or afternoon, as I find myfelf in a cue for it: this makes me unwilling to multiply those engagements which take up a great part of the day; for if I am not allowed liberty to catch at every favourable gale as it rifes, I shall make no progress in my work, nor can hope to finish it before the time comes wherein I can work no more. It was an old observation, that art is long but life fhort; and this may be applied to nobody with more truth than to myfelf, for inftead of wanting employment for my time, as is the cafe with many people, I want time for my employment: therefore I hope my good friends will indulge me in being parfimonious, in confideration of my poverty, and

xviii

and permit me to leave the larger confumptions of it to those who have less to do, or better fund of strength and spirits to fupport the expence.

The gentle Reader may expect, that in compliance with general cuftom, I should bespeak his favourable attention, by expatiating upon the importance and excellence of my fubject; but our family having never yet given into the cuftom, I shall not begin it now, but leave him to find them out as well as he can; and only prefent him with the defign I have aimed at in all my labours : which is none other than to recommend mutual Good-will to mankind, and a hearty Zeal for one another's benefit. T fuppofe there is nobody who is not willing to promote his own interest, or would be lefs willing to promote those of other people, if it could be shewn that he ferves himfelf most effectually by doing his utmost to ferve them. Now it feems to me not impoffible to make it appear, from the contemplation of nature external and internal, together with certain inferences juftly drawn in order therefrom, that every man's private intereft ftands neceffarily connected b 2 with xix

with the general good, fo that whatever advances or hurts the one, must in like manner affect the other: and the dominion of Providence defended in this chapter, is a principal link in the chain employed for that connection.

With respect to the particular part prefented in the following fheets, I shall fay no more than this, that although Prefcience, Fate, and other matters herein contained, are generally efteemed difinal and dangerous fubjects, apt to distract the brains of fuch as have entered deeply into them; and though the natural coldness of my conftitution renders me very fusceptible of alarms; yet in the manner wherein I have brought them to lie in my thoughts, I fee nothing terrifying or gloomy in them, but rather a comfortable profpect in finding that chance and human frailty, which we must acknowledge to have a great influence upon all our proceedings, stand under controul of Wildom and Goodnels. If upon the fcene here exhibited, they shall appear to lie in the fame manner to the Reader, my purpose is answered: only I beg leave to advertise him, that as I found it no eafy matter

matter to bring them into this train, fo he must expect to find fome pains and attention requifite in following it; for we shall be unavoidably compelled to fpin very fine in fome places, and without gentle and, cautious usage the thread will break in his hands. Therefore he must not go to work in a hurry; for difquifitions of this fort are not to be run off like a novel, where one has little elfe to do than to drive on poft haste to see how it ends; but he must take care to digeft one thing well before he proceeds to another; for here, as in the human body, an error in the first concoction is not to be rectified afterwards. Particularly I would recommend to him to fettle well his ideas of Liberty and Freewill in the feveral lights here reprefented, and to fix thoroughly in his mind the diftinction between the two kinds of Poffibility before he goes on to things beyond, which without this caution will fcarce appear clear or intelligible. If what he reads should give him scope for further reflection, and put him upon running over the arguments again in his own way, I would with him to dwell as little as poffible upon

b 3

mere

XXI

mere abstractions, but to judge of the abstract in the concrete: and when he has fixed upon particular instances, wherein he conceives either Fate or Freewill to have operated, first to examine each of them fingly, and then compare them together, in order to form his general inferences therefrom.

There are fome expressions, particularly that in the introductory fection, of riding upon the rays, that will appear mysterious: but this must always be the cafe with the middle of a Composition, wherein things are alluded to with which the Reader has not yet been made acquainted. Therefore he must acknowledge I have acted fairly, by giving him notice in the Title Page, that he was not to expect a Work, but the Fragment of one; for he may choofe whether he will meddle with ufuch broken wares or no; but if he does condescend to deal in them, he must not blame me for fome little inconveniencies unavoidable in a traffic of this fort.

But those expressions he may look on for the present as excressencies, not interrupting the chain of reasoning, of which I have

have cut him off a length he may examine by itfelf independantly on the matters alluded to: which whoever will take the trouble to do, fo as to make himfelf mafter of the argument as here purfued, will be qualified to give me his advice thereupon :and if he should find himself inclined to fay fome civil things of me, I will tell him the grounds upon which I conceive they might be expected. One of the exceptionable pofitions advanced in former chapters, which perhaps may draw both Divine and Philosopher upon my back, is this, that things are not laudable in themfelves, but merit commendation or cenfure, according as either would be most useful; the one being applicable as a fpur, ftimulating men to perfevere in what they have done well; the other as a bridle, reftraining from the repetition of what they had better have let alone. Therefore if my Reader chances to be in the fame way of thinking, he will give me more or lefs encouragement in proportion as he wishes to fee more of my handy work, or to have any body elfe turn their hand to the like employment.

b 4

PRE-

xxiii

F.

The ANNOTATOR

CONTRACTOR CONTRACTOR CONTRACTOR affe Course in a cher, of section of forme divit an annumer as an ound RADING WARD AND A STATE Lating that is even by the set of the set of the ter int revisions, and get not the listing, fuch is now be expected upping fillers. For sinto mouse bacine relations gillion of the ant to begin in riveling and reviously but it ownpating with per-Le staffig, inv there is this uthor har Innunde which conderfaily and adapts the for an vite niment to row writhy friend and Mallin M. Edward. Scareb. Por 42 Comment in under branch of the the in a having the like family-turn for the use of various; but being anable to There out in thing of their own, they delight

PREFACE

O F

The ANNOTATOR.

XXX HEY fay fimilitude conciliates T & affection; but then it must have fome diverfity mingled amongst XXXX it; as Ovid faid of the three Ladies, that they all had one and the fame fet of features, and yet not the fame, fuch as may be expected among fifters. For equal talents turned upon purfuit of the fame object, are apt to beget a rivalship and jealoufy, but ill compatible with perfect friendship. Now there is this diffimilar fimilitude which wonderfully well adapts me for an attachment to my worthy friend. and relation Mr. Edward Search. For the Comments are an under branch of the Searches, having the like family-turn for the ufefully curious; but being unable to ftrike out any thing of their own, they delight

xxvi

PREFACE of the ANNOTATOR.

delight to rummage among other folks works, examining, comparing, digefting, explaining, illustrating, expatiating, and doing any other little office they think may render them more ferviceable. Some of us indeed, to our shame be it spoken, have undertaken things above 'our pitch, nor fpared even the Bible itself; which they have overwhelmed with fuch a variety of expositions, and found fo many contrary fenses in the fame text, that it is become difficult to fee, any fenfe at all, through their envelopements. For my part, I never would attempt any thing of this fort without confulting my Coufin Search, who has "dropped a hint, that in his next volume he may poffibly allow me the liberty, after having prepared fome inftructions for my conduct. In fhort, we feem cut out for one another; he pleafes me, by furnishing me with matter to fpend my thoughts upon, and I please him with the fondness I show for his speculations. So we are grown hugely intimate; we communicate every. thing, and know one another as well as we do ourfelves; nay, we ftrive to enter into each others fentiments more carefully than perhaps

PREFACE of the ANNOTATOR. perhaps most people do into their own : for Search has observed somewhere, that there are many latent defires and imaginations in the human breaft unknown even to the owner. 'Twas I, that first put him upon this publication : for, good Coufin, fays I, may not it be expedient to cut off a fample from the loom before you finish your piece, in order to flow it about amongst the Mercers for their opinion of the defign? This feems advifeable for one who works out of the common track, intermingling figures of the most opposite caft among one another. Some people have blended jeft with topics of Religion, in order to turn them into jeft; others have conveyed precepts of Morality and common Prudence, in fables, figures, and allegories: but few fince Plato have attempted to intersperse humour and gaiety among close argumentations, metaphyfical refinements, and differtations upon the most ferious fubjects. Humour and Religion are both very delicate things, and though agreeable in themfelves may fuffer by their commixture, as tea and fnuff laid in the fame drawer spoil one another's flavour, nor without dexterous

xxvit

xxviii

PREFACE of the ANNOTATOR.

dexterous management can they be fo joined as that one shall not lose its dignity, nor, they other its livelinefs. Now you know we have worked all along by ourfelves, and how much foever we may have pleafed our own fancy, can never know how we shall please others without making the experiment. Troth, Coufin, fays he, I believe your advice is good. But what would you have me do? I cannot publish my work imperfect, the defign being connected in its feveral parts; fome of which feparated from the reft might be liable to misconstruction, and make me thought aiming at conclusions furthest in the world from my intention. I was fenfible of this, fays I; therefore never preffed you before. But methinks the chapter you have just now finished, contains an entire pattern that may be shown without difgusting the eve for want of other figures to join with it. Perhaps fo, fays he. But there are many allufions to former chapters, which without being let into the matters' alluded to, must appear unintelligible and mysterious: Oh! fays I, you don't confider how fond the world is of mysteries. They

are

PREFACE of the ANNOTATOR. are never fo well pleafed as with blanks, initial letters, and innuendos, which it may be have no meaning, and therefore cannot poffibly be understood. True, fays he; yet still they love to have a chink to peep at the mystery, though not enough to unveil it. Why, is it impoffible, fays I, to have a few chinks opened fome how or other by proper Annotations where neceffary? He faw my drift, and replied, I am too earnest in running off my principal work to do any fuch thing. You know I begun late in the day, having employed the former part of my life in laying in a flock of materials, and bringing my thoughts into fome regular train. You have fometimes compared me to the filkworm, that devours voracioufly for a while, and then applies wholly to the bufinefs of fpinning herself out. My day is far fpent, and I have a long web to fpin, which I fear I shall fcarce be able to compleat before night; efpecially as there are fome of my brother worms, who being no fpin-" fters themselves, delight perpetuallym to crawl over me and interrupt my work : fo I must not flop to revise, remarky or explain.

YXIX

XXX

PREFACE of the ANNOTATOR.

explain. But if you have a mind to undertake the job, I shall take it kindly. You know the particulars alluded to, as well as I myfelf; and have leave to open the chinks as wide as you judge proper. With all my heart, fays I. But that I may not exceed my commission, let me know the extent of it. As you fay you run off your work without reviling, I may chance to find fomething obfcure or liable to be mifunderstood, or omitted in an argument that might have been purfued further; may I fupply what you feem to have forgot? By all means, fays he. And you will probably find room enough for this fubftituting office: for the flate of my brain corresponds but too much with that of the weather : fo where you perceive the effect of eastern chills, you may do me good fervice, by fuggefting what I fhould have done had the air been milder. We have lived long enough together in intimacy for you to know all my thoughts, and may use your discretion upon them. Have a care, fays I, what you do. It may be dangerous to give me an unreferved liberty with all your thoughts. What if I should happen

PREFACE of the ANNOTATOR. happen to touch upon fome of the peculiarities in them? You have folong accuftomed me to a habit of Sincerity and Plaindealing, I shall not know how to palliate or cover them over with plausible colourings. No matter for that, fays he, I defire no colourings. I know you are an honess fellow, and will not do me an injury by missepresenting me. Only take care not to throw out what might do hurt to squeamiss people, you cannot offend me. xxxi

So having obtained full permiffion, I went to work upon a lining for his brocade; which he being pleafed to fay was not unfuitable to the pattern he had cut off, we refolved to push them both out upon the shop-window : wholly uncertain how they might take with the passengers, any further than as it will probably be faid, They are an Original.

CUTHBERT COMMENT.

From my Apartment in Search-Hall, 4th Ostober, 1762.

ERRATA

Pag. 40. l. 19. for forborne read forborn
102. l. 13. for gout to, which read gout, to which
124. l. 20. for it is my option, and I know read it is in my option, and know
174. l. 15. for proceedings read proceeding
188. l. 9. for refiftable read refiftible
265. l. 22. for volocity read velocity

ult. 1. ult. for ferve read fervice

CHAP. XXIV.² FREEWILL, FOREKNOWLEDGE, and FATE.

SECT. I.



22*CW # EHOLD us now arrived at Transib the most intricate part of our tion. g journey, an impracticable * A59 * CEX # wilderness, puzzled with mazes, and perplext with errors, where many mighty have fallen, and many fagacious loft their way; for shadows, clouds and darkness cover it; or what flashes of light break out from time to time, prefent the image of truth on opposite fides, the winding paths lead round the difappointed travel-

^a The Reader is not to conclude from the high number of this chapter, that the Author has huge piles of his labours in ftore : for there is but one more chapter fo long as this, and many of them will run off in feven or eight pages.

traveller to the fpot from whence he fet out, or involve him in difficulties wherein neither Protestant nor Papist, neither Divine nor Philosopher has yet found an opening, and which the facred muse of *Milton* pronounced insuperable, even by the Devil himfelf.

In this dangerous road we may be allowed with better reason than the Poets. to call in some superior power to our aid; but what Mufe, what Spirit, what God shall we invoke? For here are no private transactions unseen by mortal eye, no dreams of Rhefus broken off by the fleep of death, no fecrets of nature lying beyond our reach to be discovered : we need not dive into the bowels of the earth, nor afcend to mix among the dances of the planets, nor diffect the human frame to find all the curious threads of its organization. But our bufinefs lies with the common actions of life, familiar to every one's and every day's experience: we want only to know, whether a man may act freely who makes his choice upon motives fuggested by external objects, whether

ther he may know beforehand what his neighbour will do, or offer inducements which will infallibly prevail on him to one particular manner of behaviour, without infringing upon his liberty. Queftions that one would think could fcarce admit of a difpute; nor do they with common understandings, until men of uncommon refinements have; by their abstractions; fpun them into a fenfe not naturally belonging to them, and introduced a confusion into their ideas; by an inaccuracy of language: Therefore upon this fubject I conceive we shall have more to do with words than with things, nor find fo much difficulty in afcertaining the facts to be taken under confideration, as the proper import of the expressions employed in speaking of them.

Come then thou folemn power Philology, pioneer of the abstrufe Sciences, to prepare the way for their passage, enwrap me in thy close-bodied leathern jacket, that I may creep through the brakes and brambles of equivocation without their catching hold

.B 2 y

of

4

of me; lend me thy needle-pointed pencil, that I may trace out the hair-breadth differences of language; affift me with thy microfcope to difcern the minute changes of ideas paffing to and fro among the fame words, as they change their places in different phrafes.

If any one will follow me while I travel under thy guidance, let him look for otherguifed entertainment than when beftriding Pegafus^{*} we bounded along the rapid rays of folar or ftellar light, to vifit the Athenian^b and Samian^c Sages, to behold the

⁴ The Author fome time ago was favoured with a Vifion, wherein he was rapt in extacy out of his body, and transported to the intermediate flate lying between death, and the final confummation of all things; where he faw furprizing things not yet lawful to be uttered. Pegafus is only a figurative term to express the flights of imagination: for the Author did not ride upon a flying horfe, but was dragged along by one of the old inhabitants, who was expert in walking upon fuch moveable ground as the rays of light.

^b Plate and Secrates, with whom the Author converfed in his excursion.

c Pythagoras, from whom he received a very fcientific lecture, containing many curious matters, partly orthodox, and partly heretical.

the wonders of the vehicular state ^a, and boundless glories of the mundane foul ^e.

For thou, Goddefs, conforteft not with the Mufes nor the Genii, the flights of imagination affright thee: figure and ornament are thy abhorrence, for they blend together in wanton affemblages those ideas which thou art most follicitous to keep afunder: familiar example ' alone, of all the flowery train, thou admitteft to fhed his lustre upon the print of thy mincing

^d Inhabited by *Woolafton*'s vehicles, that is, departed fouls, carrying with them an inner tunicle, or fine organization of corporeal fubftance, inconceivably fmall, but infinitely more active and lithfome than our groß bodies.

• A created Being, of unlimited power, underftanding and excellence, commenfurate with the univerfe, whereinto the fpirits of men are abforbed on their departure from the vehicular ftate.

^f This fprightly Gentleman has proved very ferviceable to our Author, who is fond of his company as often as he can get it; as will appear by the fequel: for he has a marvellous knack at opening the paffages through briars, rendering abftractions visible, and fixing them upon the memory. It is recommended to all dealers in profound speculations to take his affistance; for he is a younger fon of Experience, employed in dispensing his father's stores upon particular occasions as wanted.

B 3

feet,

6

feet, and render the marks of them more eafily difcernible to the ftraining eye. But induftry, and fcrupulous exactnefs, are thy conftant companions; labour and vigilance thy delight, thorns and briars the favourite plants of thy garden. Whoever undertakes to accompany thee there muft prepare himfelf for toil and attention; he muft obferve the path exactly in which thou leadeft him, mark all the outlets on either hand, pafs and repafs the whole length again and again before he ventures into another turning, that he may fix fo perfect an idea of it upon his memory, as never to miftake another fimilar alley for the fame.

But fay, Goddefs, by what avenue fhall we enter the wildernefs? Does not thy methodical prudence direct, that upon every queftion we fhould first know precifely the terms concerning which the queftion is proposed? Where then can we better begin an enquiry into the Freedom of Action, than by ascertaining the proper import of Freedom?

2. Liberty,

§. 2. Liberty, fays Mr. Locke, is a power, Liberty. and fo is will; therefore they cannot be predicated of one another, for it would be abfurd to affirm of a power that it has a power. But with fubmiffion to the authority of fo great a Master, I conceive Liberty a more complex term than he has made it, and though it includes an idea of power, it contains other ideas befide. And as I apprehend it to be a negative term, implying no more than a denial of reftraint and force; for when we fay a man is free, we mean nothing elfe than that there is no hindrance against his doing or forbearing what he has a mind; therefore it will be expedient to confider how we come by the notion of Restraint or Force.,

We find ourfelves poffeffed of feveral powers of action, we can walk, or fpeak, or think, or can let them alone: fometimes difeafes or other accidents deprive us of our powers, and then we can no longer perform the functions of them; but at other times, though we remain poffeffed of our powers entire, yet we cannot exert B_4 them,

them, by reafon of fomething ftronger counteracting them. Thus a man in the ftocks has not loft his power of walking, the vigour of his muscles is not abated, nor is he lefs able to bear the fatigue of a journey on foot than he was before ; never-, thelefs, he cannot walk at all, becaufe the closeness of the wood resists the motion of his legs, therefore he is under a reftraint which hinders him from using the power nature has given him. So if he be pushed along by another stronger than himfelf, he must move forward whether he will or no, not that he has loft the natural command of his limbs to put them in motion or keep them at reft; but because he is under a force greater than he can refift.

Thus Reftraint is a comparison between fome power and an impediment preventing it from performing its proper function, as Force is the like comparison between the power of forbearance, and fome external impulse which renders action necessary, but forbearance impracticable; and Liberty denotes the absence of the other two; for when

when we pronounce a man free, we underftand thereby that there is nothing either impelling him to do what he would not, or reftraining him from doing what he would. So that all three include the idea of Power, Reftraint and Force, as well as Liberty, nor can either of them fubfift where there is none; for the bars of a prifon are no reftraint to a paralytic, nor will you give him liberty by unlocking them, neither can you force a man to fly, or a horfe to fpeak.

We may obferve further, that Liberty is fo far from being the fame thing with Power, that it may be reftored by the lofs, and leffened by the acceffion of it. Were an act of parliament made to prohibit me from going out of *London* for a twelvemonth, I fhould think it a grievous reftraint upon my liberty; but fhould I be rendered unable to ftir abroad by gout or palfy, or fome other complaint which I could not hope to get rid of in the time, the reftriction would no longer be fuch to me, and I fhould remain as much at liberty, as if the ftatute had

had never been made^{*}. On the other hand our cloaths are made to fit our bodies, fo that we can move all our limbs freely, notwithftanding the many ligatures and coverings wherewith we are enveloped; but fhould it pleafe God to caufe a pair of wings to fprout out from our fides, we fhould find our cloaths a troublefome reftraint upon

us,

^a If it be faid the law extends to every body without exception, fo that women and children are bound by the game acts, as well as the unqualified fportfman. I shall observe, that it is proper the law should speak in general terms, becaufe it would be troublefome to diftinguish constantly between the able, and the unable; and entirely needlefs, the reftraint being barely nominal with respect to the latter. And fo it would appear, if a law were to be made against what no man ' can do. As ready as we are to cavil at the ministers, if one of them were to procure an act to pais, laying a grievous penalty upon any who should fly about in the air; however we might fuspect his intellects, we fhould never fuspect his having defigns upon our liberty, nor grumble at the reftriction, which we fhould . fee was not a real one. Indeed I have heard the Teft Act complained of as a hardship, by such as had no chance of ever rifing to preferment ; but this is, because they think it difagreeable to have a mark of diffinction fet upon them: and fo is every thing difagreeable that thows a diflike, although we fuftain no immediate damage by it.

us, and we must fend for our taylors to cut flits in them for letting out the wings, in order to reftore us that liberty we had lost by the fuperaddition of a new power.

Hence we fee that liberty is fo far from being inapplicable to power, that it is properly applicable to nothing elfe; nor is it an abfurd queftion to afk, whether a power be free, for it implies no more than to enguire how fuch power ftands circumftanced with regard to any force or impediment which might compell or obstruct the exertion of it. And when we apply fuch queftions to the agent, they bear a reference always to' fome power he poffeffes, therefore a man may be free and reftrained at the fame time with respect to different powers of action; for he that is locked faft in a room may be free to think or fpeak, though he is not to go abroad; but a power to do fome particular act cannot be free while conftrained, nor the contrary,

Indeed there are degrees of freedom, not incompatible with a partial reftraint, but rather implying it, as when we find fome impediment

12

impediment obstructing us, though not fo great as that we cannot furmount it; for a man with heavy jack-boots on can still walk, though not fo freely and alertly as in a neat pair of shoes: such obstacles do not debar us the use of our powers, but render it difficult and laborious, or limit them in compass.

§. 3. Let us now caft back our eye upon the path we have trod, in order to difcover what equivocal outlets there may be to miflead the unwary traveller. We get our idea of power, fays Mr. Locke, from the changes we fee made in fubftances by one another: therefore the word Power originally and properly denotes a quality or property in fomething to caufe those changes, and is fynonimous with ability, and we have hitherto used it in that senfe. But it often carries a larger fignification, comprehending other circumstances befides ability; fo that according to the various lights wherein we place it, a man may have power when he has it not; that is, he

may

may have it in one fense while he wants it in another.

Suppose a perfon of full health and vigour bound down in his bed by a multitude of threads wound all over him; another feeing him lie motionlefs, but not knowing the occafion, fancies him ftruck with fome fudden diftemper that has taken away the use of his limbs; he laments his unhappy condition, in being at once deprived of all his powers of action : must not we pronounce this complainant mistaken, for that the man has loft none of his powers, but they all remain entire as ever, though he cannot use them until the ftrings that tie him down be loofened? If a fecond perfon comes into the room who takes the cafe differently, afcribing the man's inactivity to a fit of laziness with which he upbraids him, shall we not plead in his excufe, that it is no fault of his that he does not rife, for that the bandages hold him down fo tight, he has no power to ftir either hand or foot?

Thus

14.

Thus we fee that power may be truly affirmed or denied in the fame inftance, according to the manner wherein the queftion is propofed, or thoughts of the perfon propofing it; and a man may have ability fufficient for performing a work, which yet he is not able to do, by reafon of fome obftacle, want of fome inftrument or material, or other circumftance ftanding in the way.

We may prefume Mr. Locke underftood Power in this extensive latitude, when he made it the fame with Liberty; for where he observes that a man on the fouth fide of a prison has power to walk northwards but not fouthwards, this were not true, if spoken of natural ability; for the fame vigour of limbs which might carry him one way, would suffice to carry him any other; therefore if he want power to walk fouthwards because the walls of the prison obstruct his passage; the term must be fo construed as to include Liberty; and in this fense it would indeed be as absurd to ask; whether

ÌŞ

whether a Power be free, as whether Bluenefs be blue, or Hardnefs hard.

§.4. We may remark further, that Knowledge is often confounded with Power; for ideal caufes ^a being requifite to direct us in the choice of proper actions, we can no more proceed without them than we can without ability. If I have a paper in my cuftody which I have miflaid, upon being urged

² The Author has a chapter upon thefe, and makes them a species of ideas; as he does motives, or final causes, an under species of them. The diffinction between these three may be explained by the following instance. A man walking in the fields may fee birds flying, or cattle grazing, which ftrike ideas upon him, but fuch as are no caufes of any thing he does; for he would walk in the fame manner if they did not appear. The fight of his path, together with the windings and turnings of it, and his remembrance or information of the right way, where it parts into two, are ideal caufes without which he could not proceed; for if he had them not, he might fumble against a ftone, or wander out of the way. But health, bufinefs, or diversion, are final caufes ; becaufe without thefe, or fome other purpose in view, he would not walk at all. Thus ideal caufes are that part of our knowledge, which. does not infligate us to action, but directs us how to fhape it.

. Liberty.

urged to produce it inftantly, I shall be apt to alledge that it is out of my power fo to do, not becaufe I have not the key of the drawer where it lies, nor ftrength in my fingers to take it out as well as any other paper, but because I know not where to look for it. So if a countryman wants to fpeak with a perfon living at the further end of the town, he may fay it is out of his power to find the house; not that he wants pliancy in his joints to carry him through all the turnings leading thither as well as any citizen, but becaufe he fhould lofe his way for want of knowing the right. But this idea does not enter into difputes concerning freedom, for ignorance is effeemed a defect of power rather than an abridgement of liberty.

It has been shewn in Chap. II. that what we generally call an Action^b, is not one, but a feries of many actions; and when we go about to do a thing, we proceed to

^b And it is expedient for common use that we should call it fo; for were we to enumerate all the minute motions we make upon every occasion, we should

to the accomplishment of it by feveral intermediate steps, each whereof requires a particular exertion of power to performit. Now if there ftand an impediment any where in the way, we cannot do the thing proposed; neverthelefs we remain still at liberty to take the steps lying on this fide the impediment, and at all events can use our endeavours, how ineffectual foever they may prove. Thus if a man be hindered from going to London by floods out in the road, he may yet go up to the edge of the flood without obstacle : if he be locked into a room, he may push against the door; and if his fingers be bound round with a packthread, he may try to expand them, being at full liberty to give his muscles the inflation proper for fpreading them open.

It is obfervable likewife, that reftraint is often confounded with impotence, nor can we eafily avoid doing fo; for reftraint

fhould make no difpatch in our conversations with one another. But when we go to examine the nature of the mind, and ferutinize her manner of proceeding, we shall often find it necessary to analyze action into its conflituent parts.

being

being a comparison between our powers and any thing that might obstruct their exercife, may cease upon their increase, or may be generated by a diminution of our powers, rendering that an obstacle to our motions which was none before. Thus Sampson, after being shorn of his strength, was brought under confinement by the fame cords which were no infringement of his liberty aforetime, and if they had remained on him until his hair had grown again, he would have been restored to liberty by the return of his strength, without any alteration in the strength of the bandage.

Therefore we pronounce upon the fame cafe, as being a defect of power or of liberty, according to the light wherein we place it: the laws prohibiting the alienation of church lands, are called fometimes difabling, and fometimes reftraining flatutes; and we fpeak indifferently of a man being difabled to go abroad or confined at home by a diftemper. But in ftrictnefs, the beginning of a fever works no difability, for

IG

for there is generally then an unufual ftrength and flow of fpirits, fo that the patient might do as he did at other times, if it were not for the neceffary regard to his health, which is a bar againft his ftirring out of the houfe; whereas a palfy does properly confine, for air and exercife might be wholefome, and nothing hinders you from going abroad, but you are not able, the ufe of your limbs being fufpended by the diftemper.

Mr. Locke fays, that active power belongs only to fpirit: however this be, we certainly conceive it, and in our common difcourfes fpeak of it as refiding in things inanimate; therefore we apply the terms Force and Reftraint when we perceive them acting or moving in a manner different to that we fhould expect from their natural properties, as we do Liberty, when nothing hinders their operations: we talk of a free air, a pendulum fwinging, or a river running freely, where there is no obftruction againft their motions; of water being forced up-C 2 wards

wards by an engine, or a ftream confined within its channel, by raifing the banks.

Hence it appears, that the force of inertness afcribed by Naturalists to matter, and the force of impulse caufing its changes of ftate from motion or reft to the contrary, does not carry precifely the fame fignification with force in vulgar language; for, 'tis the impulse of gravitation, together with its own inertnefs, or perfeverance in a motion once received, that makes a torrent rush violently into the sea; yet every common man apprehends water to run downwards of itfelf, nor ever efteems it under a force, unlefs when he fees it driven upwards by fome other power, nor under reftraint, unlefs when fomething obstructs the courfe it would naturally take. And though we talk frequently of the force of a torrent, we do not understand thereby any force the water itfelf lies under, but that we fuppofe it able to put upon whatever may happen to stand in its way.

Whoever will examine the language of mankind, may find that we apply expreffions

fions to bodies which belong properly to our own manner of proceeding; and how well foever we know the contrary, fpeak of them as voluntary agents, exercifing powers of their own: thus it is faid the wind bloweth where it lifteth, and we conceive water as having a fluidity or perpetual motion among its particles, unlefs bound up by a piercing froft.

Nor do the learned abstain from the like catachrefis, when they talk of the tendencies and nitencies, the *conatus recedendi* of bodies, the fpontaneous or automatic motions of clock-work, or the laws of matter; and even when they abstract from the fecondary properties refulting from composition, they feem to conceive reft as the natural state and choice of body which it exerts its power to preferve itself in, as one may gather from their calling the *momentum* or quantity of motion in any body a force, which conveys an idea fimilar to

• For in ftrictness, law is applicable only to intelligent agents, with-held from using their powers by the fear of punishment, or obligation to authority.

C 3

that

that of a man carried along against his inclination by some impulse he strives in vain to refist.

Hours the other and

§. 5. I take notice of these niceties, not fo much for any benefit they may be of towards determining the present question, as for a caution to beware of letting such variations of language lead us aftray: for the proper and genuine signification of freedom being the absence of all obstruction which might thwart us in the exercise of any power we posses, we are free when upon employing our power it will take effect; but under restraint, when something impedes us in the exercise of our power, so as that although we should exert it, the proper consequence of such exertion would not follow.

Thus a man is at liberty to walk, if upon using his legs they will carry him to the place he purposes; but if there shand any wall or bar in the way, so that with his utmost endeavours he cannot move forwards, then he is not at liberty. And

fo

fo in all actions we have ability to perform, if they would not enfue upon our efforts, it must be owing to fome hindrance which cramps and prevents them from taking effect.

From hence it appears, that Freedom. relates to the event of our endeayours, not to the caufes of them; for whether any. or no inducement prevails on me to .walk, I am equally free, provided nothing hinders me from walking, if I ftand fo inclined ; for Liberty does not depend on any thing prior to the exercise of my power, but upon what would or would not ftand in the way after having exerted it, and therefore is not inconfistent with any antecedent caufes or disposition of Providence influencing me to walk; for how much foever they may impell me to go out of the room, I am not at liberty to do it while the door is locked, and when the door is opened I am fet at liberty, how much foever they may with-hold me from using it.

But it will be faid, all this may be very true, and yet affects not the cafe under C 4 confidera-

confideration, as it relates only to freedom of action, concerning which there is no controverfy, not to freedom of will: for no Arminian will doubt a man's being debarred of his Liberty by flutting him up in a goal; nor will the most rigid Calvinist deny, that upon being let loose he is at liberty to go which way he pleases. So the dispute turns, not upon our freedom to do as we will, but upon our freedom to choose out of several actions in our power: and both seem to agree, that whatever act is contained in the plan of Providence must be performed, nor can we will the contrary if we would,

Various Wills. §. 6. Before we enter upon the difcuffion of this queftion, it will be neceffary to underftand ourfelves in the proposing it; for men feem to me not always very clear in their idea of the term Will, as it stands in either branch of the fentence,

We learn, upon Mr. Locke's authority, that we are capable of no more than one determination of the Will at once, and 2 who-

whoever observes the motions of the human mind will find her volitions transient and momentary; the varies her action perpetually, willing this inftant what the rejects the next; and if the perfeveres for a time in one purpofe, it is by a train of numerically diftinct, tho' fimilar and correspondent volitions : therefore to afk; whether we can will this prefent inftant, if we will this prefent instant, would be an idle and trifling queflion; it must indeed be answered in the affirmative, and fo must every other of the like fort; for I can walk if I walk, ride if I ride, or do any thing elfe you can name, if I do it; and fuch hypothetical affirmations may be true of things which categorically proposed were absolutely imposfible; for it is as true, that I can lift the house if I lift it, or jump over the moon if I jump over it, as that I can take up a pin if I take it up : fuch propositions are merely identical, making a fnew of fomething profound, but-adding nothing to our information,

25

Therefore

Therefore the question, to mean any thing, must relate to different Times or different Wills, and the drift of it be to enquire either, whether by willing a thing now I can cause myself to will it by and by; or whether if I happen to will opposite things at the same time, as to buy a costly trinket and to save my money, I can by one Will controul the other, or by a third Will choose which of the two shall have the guidance of my conduct.

To the first of these enquiries, one cannot give a direct answer, it being notorious by every day's experience, that we do determine upon what we will do beforehand, and many times do it accordingly, but at other times do it not, and that upon two accounts; either because we have changed our mind, or because though we continue in the same, we find some defire, or terror, or difficulty rise upon us too ftrong for our resolution; but changes of mind create no doubts concerning liberty; for nobody imagines that our resolving upon a thing lays us under a neceffity of performing it, although

although good reafons fhould occur to the contrary, or our judgement fhould alter; nor will deny, that how ftrongly foever I have determined to leave *London* feven years hence, I may remain perfectly free all the while to determine otherwife whenever I think proper.

Which by the way fhews Liberty not incongruous with prior causes; for if I do fomething becaufe I had refolved upon it beforehand, and this we practife every day of our lives, the volition whereby I perform it must be acknowledged an effect of my former determination, neverthelefs will be counted a free act in every body's estimation, provided nothing hinders but that I might omit it; therefore if my first determination were contained within the plan of Providence, the performance may make a part of that plan without infringement of my liberty; for even fuppofing me influenced to refolve by fome irrefiftible grace, or fupernatural impulse, though I was not free in making, I am yet free in keeping the refolution, nor does there need any more I

more than to keep off all fuggestions which might alter my judgement, or temptations which might overpower it, and I shall execute what was resolved on by virtue of the freedom remaining within me.

But when we change our conduct without changing our mind, and do not profecute what we have in our intention, by reafon of fome appetite drawing the contrary way, then difputes and difficulties arife; becaufe we conceive our Will ftill exerting itfelf, but prevented from taking effect by a fuperior force or impediment counter-acting it, which prefents the genuine idea of a want of Liberty.

Thus this queftion, whether by our prefent Will we may determine what we shall will at fome future time, becomes reduced into that other, whether one Will may controul or confine another coexistentWill.

§. 7. And no wonder we find perplexities in examining metaphyfically a queftion, the terms whereof have no place in the metaphyfical vocabulary; for there is a philo-

philofophical, and there is a vulgar language, and if fludious men will mingle their abfractions among vulgar ideas, they muft unavoidably bewilder themfelves in mazes and darknefs.

The notion of a diverfity of Wills is unknown to him that carefully fludies the motions of the human mind, for her acts are inftantaneous and transitory; nor can the perform any more than one at the fame time: we have various powers of action, and they all lie under the command of the mind to turn them upon one particular object; her giving them that turn is properly volition, and it is as abfurd to imagine the fhould exert opposite volitions together, as that the wind thould blow eaft and weft.

We may be reftrained in the ufe of our powers, becaufe their operation paffes through feveral ftages; we work upon certain unknown nerves, they inflate the mufcles, the mufcles pull the tendons, the tendons move the limbs, and if there be an obfiruction any where, we have not liberty to perform the action intended, how much

much foever we may endeavour it; but the acts of the mind upon the first corporeal fibre receiving her impulse are immediate, fo there is no room for any impediment to interfere in stopping their progress: we may indeed imagine her to lose her power by the fibre becoming incapable, or being removed out of her reach; but we have seen that when power is gone, there is no place either for Liberty or Reftraint.

Nor let it be afked, whether the mind be free to determine her own acts; for this implies, that one volition is the confequence of another, and fo it may be remotely; but we have flown in a former place, that the mind never acts upon herfelf, unlefs by the mediation of motives; for there is no one action of our lives which we do not enter upon through fome motive of judgement or inclination, or prefent fancy; and even if we had an elective power befides our active, how much foever that might determine the latter, it muft itfelf

itself be determined by fome fatisfaction apprehended in the choice ².

But the fuggestion of motives to our thoughts is as much an action, as the moving of our limbs, and if any thing obstructs their rising, notwithstanding our endeavours to call them up, we may be free or restrained with respect to that action; but in respect to our first endeavours, we are no more capable of either, in one case than the other ^b.

There-

31

^a There is a long chapter upon this head, wherein it is endeavoured to overthrow the doctrine of a Freewill of indifference, and to fhew, in confirmation of what Mr. *Locke* had advanced before, that the expectation of prefent fatisfaction, or efcape of prefent uneafinefs, is the thing that determines the Will in her every motion; that remote good never moves her, unlefs by the fatisfaction taken in making advances towards it; and that when we do wrong, we are mifled by prefent gratification appearing more fatisfactory than a greater diftant good.

^b It having been fhown in a former place, that the mind never acts upon herfelf, unlefs by mediation of fome material organ employed to raife ideas of reflection before her; which is an action as much as holding up a paper to exhibit the writing thereon to our fight. Now the mind cannot be reftrained from touching

Therefore we may agree with Mr. Locke in pronouncing Liberty as little applicable to Volition, taken in the philosophical fense, as Squareness is to Virtue, or Swiftness to Sleep,

§. 8. But if we liften to the common difcourfes of mankind, we fhall find them fpeaking of feveral Wills, feveral agents in the fame perfon refifting, counteracting, overpowering-and controuling one another : hence the fo ufual expressions of the spiritual and carnal Wills, of the man and of the beast, of self-will and reason, of denying our Wills, subduing our passions, or being enflaved by them, of acting unwillingly or against our will, and the like: all which take rife from a metonyme of the cause for

touching the organ, though the latter may be hindered by fome obftacle from answering the touch. Thus if I am prevented from thinking, either by the fumes of indigeftion, or the noife of people gabbling about my ears, yet nothing prevents me from trying, which is all the mind has to do; but in one cafe the organs are rendered unfit to perform their office; and in the other, the ideas they caft up are obfcured by those thrown in forcibly by the fenses.

the

the effect, for our actions being conftantly determined either by the decifions of our judgement; or follicitations of our defires; we mistake them for the Will itself: nor is it a little confirmation of the Will being actuated by motives, to find them fo intimately connected therewith that a common eye cannot diffinguish them apart.

When in our fober moods we deliberate and afterwards fix upon our measures of conduct; we look upon fuch determination as our Will, which we conceive not a transfient act, but an abiding power, exerting itself from time to time as opportunities offer, until either the defign be compleated, or fresh reasons prevail on us to alter it.

But it often happens, that fome inordinate paffion or inveterate habit comes athwart our way, and puts us by from the profecution of our defign, without making us change it: this we likewife regard as our Will, being fenfible that what we do by its inftigation is ftill our own act, and becaufe we find the fame defire prompting

D

us

us at different times, we apprehend this too a permanent power lying in us, ready to be exerted upon the proper objects prefenting. Thus we get the idea of two Wills oppofing, impeding, reftraining, and maftering one another.

Sometimes there enfues a conteft between them, the mind hovering uncertain for a while, until at laft fhe fettles on either fide: hence comes the idea of a third Will, determining between the other two; and I believe this gave rife to the notion of an elective, befides our active power.

But these ftruggles are owing to the fluctuations of ftrength in our motives, and the victory to fome one of them catching the idea of Satisfaction away from the reft: for 'tis well known, that motives as well of reafon as paffion, do not always appear in equal colours, nor prefs with equal force, but urge vehemently or feebly by turns, with frequent and fudden variations: and we may perceive the like wavering in our cooleft deliberations between two measures

of

of conduct or two diversions, wherein the mind cannot be sufficient of giving a preference, being disposed all along to follow whichever shall be found the best or most entertaining; but both appear such alternately, until at last the ballance of judgement or fancy settles without intervention of the Will to cast it either way.

§. 9. Nevertheless, men cannot be put out of their accustomed manner of talking and thinking, therefore in compliance with their conceptions, let us fuppofe a diverfity of Wills, that those Wills exert permanent acts, lafting for hours and days without intermiffion, and that we may will at one time, what we shall will at another. In this light there is certainly room for applying reftraint and freedom to the Will; for its operations being now conceived paffing through a length of time before they take effect, may be obstructed, or turned aside in their paffage by fomething elfe: fo if I do in the afternoon what I had determined in the morning to forbear, my former Will D 2 fill

fill continuing the fame, I am under a force, and the Will I have at prefent is a different Will from that remaining with me from the morning's determination, and counteracts it.

But it being obvious that we can exert our power only one way at a time, we are apt to entertain a contradictory notion that, while we have a diverfity of Wills within us, one of them only is our own, and efteem each of them fuch in turn according as we chance to be in the humour. - Sometimes it is the will of inclination, and must be fo taken in all expressions relating to felf-denial, to curbing our Wills, or to things we do unwillingly, or against our will, that is, against our liking : but more commonly we understand the determination of our judgement to be our Will, because there are none of us without this Will, for I suppose nobody ever refuses to do what hispresent judgement represents as beft, provided it give him no trouble in the performance, nor thwart any inclination, or fancy whatever, therefore this is a Will always

always fubfifting in us, though not always taking effect.

As to the third Will, that of Election, this takes place only occafionally, when there is a contest between the other two: for as nobody ever chooses to act against his judgement without fome inclination drawing him, or uneafinefs driving him the other way; fo likewife I imagine nobody ever chooses to abstain from doing what he likes, when he fees no reafon in the world why he should forbear; when Reafon and Inclination urge the fame way, or one alone follicits, the other remaining totally filent, which frequently happens, there is but one object prefented to the mind, who in that cafe has no room to make any choice or election at all.

Therefore the will of Judgment or Refolution, in common propriety of language, is to be effecemed our Will, our freedom depending upon the prefence, or abfence of any impediment which might prevent that from directing our motions: and fo St. Paul underftood it, where he reprefents

D 3

the

the carnal man as omitting to do the things he would, and doing the things he would not, which he juftly ftiles, a wretched bondage : nor can that glorious liberty of the Sons of God, which we are exhorted to affert, be better expounded than by an exemption from all inordinate defires and temptations, fo that we may perform whatever our reafon and duty recommends with eafe and readinefs.

§. 10. But there is a reftraint which our judgement lays upon itfelf, when an action occurs we judge eligible regarded alone, but cannot be done without omitting fomething elfe we judge more expedient, we think ourfelves not at liberty to do it. Thus if I am afked to do fome little good office for a friend, when fome bufinefs of importance calls me another way, I fhall excufe myfelf by faying, I would gladly oblige him if I were not under a neceffity of attending to my bufinefs.

It is this opposition of things eligible to the judgement, if confidered apart, that gives

gives birth to those we have called Motives of Neceffity^a, to Obligation, to Duty, the command of a Superior, the regard for our Health, our Preservation, the avoidance of Mischief, or Damage; all which compelus many times to act otherwise than we wish, or than our judgement would choose, if these bars did not stand in the way : but this kind of necessity is a very unstable term, the same case being esteemed such in one light which is not in another.

A man having a feal put forcibly into his hand, and the hand with the fame violence preffed down upon wax affixed to a deed, containing a conveyance of his eftate, will be counted by every body under neceffity; but then the fealing is no more his act than it is the act of the feal employed therein,

D 4

for

^a In a former chapter upon that article; wherein Neceffity is made one of the four claffes under which all our motives of action may be reduced; the other three being Pleafure, Ufe, and Honour. For we never ftir a finger, unlefs to pleafe ourfelves more or lefs, or for fome ufe we apprehend therein, or becaufe we efteem it in fome degree laudable, or becoming, or becaufe we muft for avoiding fome mifchief or inconvenience.

for both act by impulse without any thing that can be called freedom.

But what if his hands being left at liberty, he be only locked up in a room, and threatened to be kept there without victuals or drink until he shall feal? Perhaps he has. a wife and children who must be ruined by the loss of his eftate, and being a man of refolution, he determines bravely to perifh rather than bring them to deftruction : in this forlorn condition he lolls out at a window, where he fees an intimate friend of of his, a lawyer, who advifes him to execute, for that no damage can enfue therefrom : he then calls for the deed, fets to his. feal, and obtains his enlargement. This the Philosopher will not allow to be an act of neceffity, for it was in his power to have. forborne, and he did actually forbear until his friend's admonition having altered his judgement, he chofe voluntarily to feal, upon a prudential motive of faving his life without detriment to his family. The Grantees bring ejectment for the land in Westminster-hall, where the whole case appearing

pearing upon evidence as above, the judge and jury pronounce the deed void, for that the man was under *dureffe*, and his act not voluntary but imposed upon him by force. Thus we find the fame act adjudged neceffary in legal construction, which was free and voluntary in the philosophical.

Now to change the cafe a little, imagine the confinement were in a public gaol for a lawful debt, which the party has no means of paying, nor credit to procure bail; fomebody offers to purchase a farm contiguous to his houfe, and which it would be greatly inconvenient for him to part with, neverthelefs he confiders his health is infirm, and if he remains in prifon it will inevitably prove his death; fo he accepts the offer as the only poffible means of extricating himfelf. If he be afterwards blamed for fo imprudent a bargain, he will alledge the neceffity of his affairs compelling him to it; and this allegation will be readily admitted as a full excuse. If upon ejectment brought, he offers to refund the money, and refuses to deliver possession, urging

urging the neceffity he lay under, I am afraid this plea will not avail him; for the court will fay, his act was free and voluntary, nor was he under any compulsion when he did it, therefore it must stand good.

Let us now vary our circumstances once more, and suppose the man under no confinement or debt at all; but he has taken a fancy to fome girl of the town; the wants a fum of money to throw away uponan extravagance, and will leave him for fome other gallant, unless he will supplyher, which he has no means of doing any other way, than by fale of the farm above-mentioned: he is fo befotted with her allurements that he cannot live without her; fo he executes the conveyance, though forely against the grain, and against his judgement; he will be apt to plead neceffity in excuse for this foolish proceeding; but no indifferent perfon will admit it for fuch: here then is a necessity men deem to themfelves, though nobody elfe will call it by that name.

43

2. 20

But Neceffity being conftantly oppoled to Freewill, the changeableness of these terms, according to the lights wherein you regard them, gives rife to as notable difputes among us, as those canvassed of old among the Philosophers concerning the proper colout of the feathers of a cockpidgeon's neck, which presents a different association of the bird.

§. 11. Every body efteems freedom the bafis of morality; for no man deferves praife or blame for doing what he could not help, or omitting what he was not at liberty to perform: we are juftified in doing things upon the command of a fuperiour, which were blamcable had we done them upon our own accord; and it is a received maxim, that neceffity has no law. Neverthelefs the reftraints laid upon us by our vices juftify us not, and the flave of fin is always thought anfwerable for the drudgery he goes through in obedience to his tyrant. On the other hand, we

we may merit commendation, by complying with the neceffary obligations of ourreligion and our duty.

Oftentimes, as has been already remarked, we blend the idea of impotence with. want of liberty, or attribute to the one, ... what proceeds from the other; and indeed the latter in fome measure depends upon the former; for whatever obstacle stands in our way, were our ftrength increafed fo as greatly to furmount it, would become none, but we should be set at liberty from its opposition. A man bound hand and foot with cords, upon having the ftrength of Sampfon given him, would regain his liberty without being untied : and a cobweb wound about our hands makes no abatement in our freedom, though it destroys that of a fly; not that it does not oppose the fame refistance against our fingers as it does against the legs of the fly, but because that refistance is nothing in comparison with our greater strength.

When fome fond paffion captivates the heart, and forces us upon actions our prefent

fent judgement difapproves, we are faid to labour under an impotence of mind; and the compliance with fuch temptations as few or none can refift, is attributed to the weakness of human nature. When honour, or duty calls a man to fome very painful enterprize, like those of Scævola, Regulus, or the Christian Martyrs, he does not want freedom of action to accomplish it; for his hands will as readily obey the command of the mind to thrust them into burning coals, as into a bafon of water, if he can but bring his mind to give the command : perhaps fome of us might refolve upon fuch an exploit, but fhould probably flinch in the attempt; and we many times do enter confidently upon undertakings where we find our courage fail in the execution: here then is an effect of the Will directing her own volitions, which yet are forcibly turned a contrary way-by the terrors of the pain; fo then here, if ever, the Will is not free to follow her own choice and election : neverthelefs, when trials

trials of this fort have been undergone; we do not reckon them inftances of greater freewill, but greater strength of virtue, and extraordinary vigour of mind.

So if a covetous man intends to give money in charity, but when he comes to take his guineas out of the bag, has not the heart to part with them; he has a will to do a generous deed, and would execute it if not restrained by his fondness for the pelf; yet we do not ordinarily reckon him destitute of Freewill, but that he has not power to give any thing away. Thus we efteem the fame cafe a defect of Liberty, or of Power, according as we fix our eye upon the strength of the obstacle, or feebleness of the agent.

Free

46

§. 12. The Speculative talk much of a Agency. free and neceffary Agency, terms not in. use among the vulgar, nor do they lofe any thing by the want of them : for if we go to examine what Free Agency is, we . shall find it to be no more than the dependency

dency of actions upon volition, therefore man is a free Agent, because his limbs move according to the directions of his Will,

* It is not clear that my friend Search has hit the exact notion of free Agency, as underftood by those who commonly employ the term. For according to his definition, we must ascribe it to the Brutes, not excepting the most stupid of them, the Slugg and the Beetle; because unless we suppose them mere Cartesian machines, we must allow their motions to depend upon their volition; for when they crawl to the right hand or the left, it is not by impulse, like a billiard ball ftruck on either fide, but they are drawn that particular way by fome allurement ftriking their fenfe, and might as well have crawled the contrary, if the like allurement had invited them thither. Yet we do not hold them for free Agents, nor effeem them accountable Creatures, or capable of moral good and evil; as we do man, folely upon account of his having the privilege of free Agency. So that their Agency feems to be of a middle nature, between free and neceffary: fomething that partakes of both, and yet is neither.

Now in order to fettle the idea of free Agency, let us obferve that man, befides his power of acting according to the motives in his imagination, has a power over the imagination itfelf, to call up ideas there, which would not arife of their own accord. But this power the Brutes feem to want; for though they remember, they do not recollect; they have ideas of reflection, but fuch only as are thrown upon them mechanically; they have combinations and affociations, formed by the frequent appearance of objects together, without

Free Agency.

48

Will, but Matter a neceffary Agent, as having no will, and acting folely by virtue of the motion or impulse imparted to it.

Not

without any endeavours of their own to unite them ; and if they fometimes make inferences, those are such as occur to them spontaneously, and are not drawn out by fludy and meditation. Now this privilege of voluntary reflection, commonly called Understanding or Reafon, is what denominates us free Agents, and renders us accountable for our manner of using it. Not but that in fome of our actions, one can find no difference from those of our fellow animals: for a dog upon turning the corner of a ftreet, if he faw another dog running against him, would start aside, I suppose, as well as a man upon the like occasion. Therefore in this inflance the actions of both are fimilar : and numberless instances might be produced, wherein we act under the guidance of fense and imagination, without direction of our understanding, or reflection upon what we are doing. Yet how much foever we may act in this manner, without using our understanding, we might always use it if we would : therefore this privilege remaining always with us, we efteem ourfelves always free Agents: and the omiffion of using it, is equally imputable to us, with any wrong use we may make of it.

But to bring off our Author as well as we can, it may be alledged, that those actions only which we perform with a reflex act, or confciousness accompanying them, and with confent of the mind upon some confideration, how transient soever, of what we are

about.

Not but upon a man's being pufhed violently down to the ground his fall is neceffary, but then it is properly no act of his; for though we are apt to fay he hurt himfelf by

about, are effeemed the work of our will: but what we do inadvertently, by fudden impulse of fancy, or furprize of habit, we are faid to do accidentally, or mechanically. Therefore these actions, being ordinarily not reckoned our own, nor effects of our will, it fill remains true, that free Agency is the dependance of our actions upon our volition : taking those terms in the sense wherein those who talk of free Agency underftand them.

We may observe further, that this double power the human mind possesses, of acting as well upon the imagination as upon the limbs, probably gave rife to the notion of an elective power, coexistent with our active. For her reflex act, introducing new ideas, firiking various lights from them, changing the colour of our motives, removing fatisfaction to a different point, thereby caufing other actions to enfue, than would have followed upon the motives first occurring, and employed as often in adding ftrength to the follicitations of paffion, as weight to the judgements of reafon; it is looked upon as the operation of another power, directing that whereby we perform our bodily motions, and fetting it at work without the intervention of motives, and even contrary to their influence. Whereas in reality thefe are not different powers, but one and the fame, exercifed upon different subjects, to wit, the mental and corporeal organs;

nor

50

by the fall, which implies fomething done by him, yet upon mature confideration, we never attribute the hurt to him, but to the perfon who threw him down : for in this cafe his motion is fimilar to that of body, which does not properly act, but only transmits the action of fomething elfe that moved it. When a ftone ftrikes against a wall it ferves only as a channel of conveyance for the force of the engine from whence it was caft, that again of the springs and wheels whereby it was worked, and so backwards in a feries of effects and causes, until you come to fome voluntary agent

nor do they direct one another any otherwife, than as when a man reads an advertifement posted up against a market-house, the fight of what he reads, raises a defire he might not otherwise have felt, of purchasing the wares specified therein, and directs him where to feek for them; and so gives birth to other actions than he would have performed upon the motives in his thought, before he turned his eyes upon the paper.

But however this be, it affects not the main argument carried on in the text: for whatever idea we entertain of Agency, flill our freedom confifts in the removal of all impediment against its taking effect upon being exerted, but has no concern at all with the causes, or inducements prevailing on us to exert it.

giving

giving the first impulse, whose act it is, whether he intend the consequence or no. If a man shoots another, the wound made by the bullet is his act, and he chargeable with the murder; or if he shot at a crow and happened to kill a man, though he be guilty of no crime, still the slaughter is his act, but an undefigned and accidental one. And if we commonly as for be powers to body, it is because we cannot trace them back to the causes from whence they originally forung.

Upon this view of the matter, we fee that free Agency has nothing to do with queftions concerning Liberty, for the one may remain after the other being taken away. A man fhut up in a prifon ftill continues a free agent of fuch actions as he can perform; if he would gladly go abroad but fits ftill in his wicker chair, as knowing the doors are locked, his quiefcence is an act of free Agency, not like that of the chair he fits on, for he might have rofe from it if he would. Or if he be floved along by the floulders, though he muft E = 2 move,

move, being under a force, yet he is a free agent in the motion of his legs, for a flatue pushed along in like manner, being a neceffary agent, would have fallen upon its face.

Thus how much foever we may be abridged or confined in our powers, while there is any thing left that we can do, our free agency fubfifts entire, for this relates only to our manner of doing those actions we perform, that is, by willing them; and confequently in every thing a man does which is properly his act, whether by compulsion, or restraint, or free choice, he is in that instance a free agent, or in other words, he is fuch whenever he is an agent at all.

§. 13. But all this will not fatisfy the curious, for they afk further, whether a man have free agency to will fuch a particular exertion of his power as well as to execute it: now this is another kind of Agency from that we have been fpeaking of hitherto; and for diffinction fake we fhall beg leave to call it free Volency (for the

53

the Speculative will allow one another to coin a word upon occafion): fo the queftion is not whether man be a free Agent, but a free Volent; for his agency remains the fame, provided his actions follow according to his volition, whatever laws this latter be fubject to.

Now in order to raife a question upon this head, we must suppose our Volition the effect of fome prior or other act of the Will befides the Volition itself under examination: but we have feen in the progrefs of this work, that the Will is no fubject of her own operation, but takes her turns from time to time, according to the prefent flate of the judgement and imagination, therefore the epithet Free, can neither be affirmed, nor denied, nor any ways applied to Volency; this not being immediately produced by any exertion of our power. 'Tis true, we do often determine beforehand what we will do, and purfue meafures accordingly, which we should have omitted; had it not been for fuch determination ; and in this fense the Will acts upon herself, E 3 but

54

but then fhe does it mediately by fixing fuch ideas, refolutions, or propenfities upon the memory and imagination as will ferve her for motives by and by; and it is plain her agency terminates with the impreffing fuch ideas, becaufe if they flip out of our head, or fomething happens to render the determination inexpedient, though we act contrary to it, yet no doubts arife concerning our free Agency, either in the first determination or fubfequent volition.

Befides, fome of our actions leave room for no more than one operation of the Will; a man turning the corner of a ftreet fees fomebody come haftily against him, and fuddenly ftarts back; here the first act of his Will is that whereby he moves his limbs, fo there is no prior Agency whereto the term Free may be applied.

There are fome who hold two confubfifting Wills, an active and an elective, the latter continually directing the former, how truly I fhall not examine; but upon this fuppofition man is a free Agent, and a free Volent; for free Agency is the dependance

of

of his actions upon volition, and free volency the dependance of volition upon his . choice; but you cannot go on further to entitle him a free electant too; for I never heard of any body fpinning the thread fo fine as to suppose another election determining that which determines the Will: all who hold an elective power making it either dependant upon motives, or felf-moving independent on all caufes whatever, even on any prior, or other act of the Will, fo the term Free cannot be applicable to it, becaufe we are free only in fuch things as will enfue upon fome previous act of the Will exerted to produce them.

We do indeed often talk in common conversation of a free, and a forced choice; but this relates to the confequence of our choice, not to the manner of making it, and depends not fo much upon our being able to choofe, as to obtain the thing chofen. We fay indeed, a man has not liberty to choose when he knows the thing is not to be had, because he cannot will an impoffibility;

E4

poffibility, for how much foever we may with or defire, we never actually Will without a prefent apprehension of fomething feasible: but this proves volition dependant upon final caufes, occuring to the imagination, for an unattainable end is no end at all, becaufe it is not a thing wherein our efforts may terminate, nor can the mind raife a volition of it by any power the poffeffes. Befides that choice, in vulgar acceptation, lies undoubtedly liable to conftraint, we meet with numberless instances every day of our being confined in our choice; which shows that choice in this fense is a different thing from the elective power spoken of just now; for that, the maintainers of it infift upon as a privilege inherent in human nature, which nothing can divest us of, nor any external force, or circumstances of fituation controul; but that we have always power to will, how much foever we may be restrained from doing.

§. 14. Thus

57

§. 14. Thus have I endeavoured to point FreeWill. out fome of those variations of fense our words are liable to, according to the occafion introducing them, or light wherein they are placed: and it is this fluctuation of language that makes the labyrinth, and throws up the briars and thorns that entangle us in our reasonings upon human Liberty. For men set out with one question, but scarce have gone a few steps before they slide infensibly into another, from thence into a third, and so on without limitation: no wonder then they cannot come to a fatisfactory conclusion upon a subject perpetually changing.

I know of no other use " in the difcuffion above attempted of those several changes,

^a Every common man apprehends himfelf as having the command of his actions, and fome underftanding to judge of their expedience. He knows his powers are limited in compafs, or many times obftructed by outward impediments from taking effect when exerted, and that his judgement is defective. Yet he can always ufe what judgement he has, and apply his endeavours towards helping himfelf to the thing it recommends. He fees likewife that there are methods to be

changes, unlefs to warn men against being beguiled by them, for let them keep their ideas steady, and I believe they will find no difficulties. Therefore I hold it wrong to enter upon a debate concerning free Will in general, that being a variable term, as well in our common discourses, as in our abstract speculations, for the Will is always free,

be employed for improving his judgement, and inculcating motives upon his mind that will invigorate his endeavours in time of action. When he has failed in any of these points, he takes shame to himself for the omission; and when he has done his best, feels an approbation resting upon the deed. All this he can easily comprehend, and is comprehension enough for his use: for in the business of life, we never talk of free Agency, nor find occasion to diffinguish between freedom of Action, and freedom of Will, nor to examine how many consult for the possible of the po

Therefore honeft Ned acknowledges the fine-fpun difcuffions he has attempted, of no ufe to fuch as can be contented to keep within the compafs of common fenfe: but if they will needs launch out into fubtile refinements, until they find themfelves entangled, he offers his beft affiftance to extricate them. Only he defires they will not think of untying all the knots at once; but obferve where the thread flicks, and apply his directions from time to time, for difingaging it, in that particular part where they find the prefent difficulty.

free, that is, always doing fomething or other while we wake, yet at the fame time may be confined to one, or a few ways of exerting herfelf: but let them take into confideration particular acts of the Will, and they will find her fometimes free, fometimes under force or reftraint, and fometimes neither of the three applicable to her, according to the different lights wherein they regard the matter, according to what they underftand by the term Will, and what they apprehend to be an act of her's.

But with respect to our main point the confistency of human Freedom with Providence, it is not much matter what notions men entertain of Liberty, of Agency, of Will, or Choice, provided they contemplate each instance fingly by itself, and do not blend them together, nor change them, by juggling like a conjuror with cups and balls. For they must differ for much fimilitude in all cases of Liberty that can be produced, if they will but keep their ideas clear, and under fuch diffipline as not to jostle,

Free Will ...

joftle, or run into one another, that the fame confequences will always follow, how varioufly foever they may understand Liberty in the feveral cafes proposed.

§. 15. Let us confider a man just enlarged out of prilon, who we shall fay has regained his liberty, becaufe he can flay at home, or go abroad this way, or that, north or fouth as he pleafes. So his freedom confifts in the dependance of his motions upon his Will, in his ftanding fo circumftanced as that nothing hinders but that reft, or motion, or any particular motion he shall direct, shall enfue upon his willing; it does not at all relate to the inducements he may have for willing, whether fome prudential motive, or fudden flart of fancy, or impulse of passion, or whether he put it to the caft of a die, in each cafe he remains at full liberty to do as he will.

Well, but suppose him under the authority of some master, who gives him a holiday to divert himself at home, or go abroad wherever

wherever he choofes. I shall not dispute, whether the injunctions of a Superiour be frictly an abridgement of human Liberty, for that they may be difobeyed by any one who shall difregard the confequences: let us grant for the prefent, that he could not do the thing whereon his choice shall fall, if any prohibition were given against it, yet there being no fuch prohibition, leaves him besides his liberty of action, a liberty of choice in what manner he shall ufe his other liberty : now this liberty, like the former, confifts in the dependance of his actions upon his choice; for where he has free choice, nobody can doubt he will do as he choofes; and where he has not, he may be forced to do what he does not choofe: but it has no concern with the causes of his choice, whether he spend his holiday prudently, or foolifhly, according to his own whims, or the perfuafions of an acquaintance.

But fuppofe he has ftrong reafons either of religion, or duty, or refpect to fome Relation who may leave him a good legacy 2 which

which urge him to go one way, but his companions, or his own jovial difpofition, follicit him another to the alehoufe, and nobody has any authority to interpole, fo he remains still at liberty to choose between them, becaufe he may take either way as his will and his choice shall direct. No, you fay, 'tis not clear that he has a freedom of choice; for though I admit he may do as he choofes, yet I doubt his being free to choole ; becaufe his evil habit of tippling may force a choice upon him whether he will or no. Beware, my friend, of the mazes in the labyrinth, for we are now striking into another alley, and starting a different question from that we had under contemplation before.

In common usage, we apply Liberty indifferently to the power or act performed thereby; for we fay the choice is free when nothing hinders, but that we may do whatever it shall pitch upon, and the act free when it follows in confequence of our choice, and not of any compulsion obliging

ing us to perform it. And one of the moft dangerous fources of perplexity arifes from the want of diffinguishing in our enquiries concerning the freedom of a power, whether we regard it as a cause or an effect; for while we behold it in a double light; as too frequently is done, we shall never fee diffinctly where to find an iffue. According to your present stating the doubt, we must confider it as an effect, the proper object of some power the man has to influence his choice, unless the prevalence of habit should give it a contrary bias.

As to cafes of reftraint they will conduce nothing to our main purpole, therefore we will confider only fuch cafes wherein you may fuppole a freedom of choice in our prefent fenfe of the Term, that is, as an effect of fome power we poffels.

§. 16. Suppose a man deliberating in the morning how he shall lay out his afternoon: there are no bolts nor bars in his way, no authority of a superiour, nor restraint

ftraint of law, duty, honour, or obligation intervening in the matters under deliberation, fo we know his afternoon's actions will be fuch as his Will and Choice fhall then direct, but neither is there any ftrong inclination, or paffion at work, which might drive him upon one way of employing himfelf preferably to the reft, fo he ftands indifferent to choofe now in what manner he fhall difpofe of himfelf in the afternoon, nor has he any choice until he fhall determine it by fome prefent act of his Will.

I do not give this as a philosophical reprefentation of the cafe, but certain it is, we often do conceive ourfelves in a fituation (how justly 'tis no matter) to will or choose what we shall will and do by and by *: for if

^a But when we act in confequence of a previous choice, we do fo, either becaufe retaining in mind the reafons inducing us to make it, or becaufe confiding in our judgement that there were fufficient reafons, or becaufe the expedience conftantly found in adhering to a refolution once taken, without which we could compleat none of our purpofes, has given us a habit of perfe-

if upon afking a friend to walk with you in the Park this afternoon, he fhould gravely reply, Good, Sir, I cannot poffibly tell you, for the prefent moment only is in our power; my future actions depend upon my future volitions, and the Will cannot act upon itfelf, nor is what I fhall do five hours hence the fubject of my prefent option: you would think he bantered you, and be apt to cry, Pr'ythee cannot you choofe either to walk, or let it alone, cannot you tell me whether you will or no?

Therefore unlefs we will talk in a ftrain contrary to the language and conceptions of all mankind, we muft acknowledge that a perfon in the cafe before us has a perfect freedom of choice. But wherein does this freedom confift? where, unlefs in the ab-

perfeverance: all which are motives weighing with the Will, unlefs other motives fhould arife to take off their force. Therefore in cafes of prior determination, we operate upon our own Will no otherwife, than we might operate upon the Will of another perfon, by fuggefting motives fufficient to prevail with him; as when we engage a labourer to work for us by the promife of good wages for his fervice.

F

fence

fence of all impediment, reftraint, authority, obligation or force whatfoever againft his power of choofing, fo that his choice will continue fuch as he fixes it, and his afternoon's actions follow precifely according to his prefent determination, nor has it any thing to do with the motives or caufes inducing him to choofe riding rather than walking, or ftaying at home before both.

But we have not done yet; for fome there be who infift upon an elective Power^b confubfifting with our power of Volition, and determining it as well in giving the preference to what we are to do

^b King upon the origin of Evil, and his Commentator Law, place the operation of this elective Power in annexing the idea of Beft, to whatever action we think proper, which then the Will proceeds immediately to perform. Yet they allow the action fo performed to be a free act: which fhews Freedom, even according to their notion of it, not inconfiftent with the influence of motives; for the idea fo annexed, may furely be acknowledged to operate as a motive, influencing the Will to purfue the Action whereto we have united it, as much as if we had found them united by decifion of the judgement, or reprefentation of the fancy.

67

hereafter, as in the prefent exercise of our bodily powers. Be it fo, fince they will have it fo. Then the freedom of this elective Power depends upon the removal of all force or impediment against the Will taking fuch determination as is elected, but not at all upon the caufe of fuch election. Add further, that when we do what we had elected or determined beforehand, nobody will deny our being free in the volitions exerted at the time of execution: which proves Freedom confiftent with Precaufation, for otherwife either our Election and Predetermination must have no avail nor influence upon our future conduct, or elfe must put a force upon the Will, conftraining it to act conformably to them until-they were compleated.

§. 17. Thus how many powers foever we may conceive in the mind directing one another, the proper and genuine idea of Freedom, with refpect to each of them, will be the fame: for in order to difcufs the point of freedom, we must confider F_2 fome

fome operating power as the caufe, and fome exertion of the power operated upon as an effect to be produced thereby: if fuch effect will follow as may be expected from the caufe, then are we free in the operating power, and our exertion of the operated is our own free act; but if a different effect will follow, then are we under force or reftraint.

If we enquire further whether we be free to use this operating power, this is a new question which must be discuffed in like manner with the former, by confidering the operating power as an effect, and some other power not thought of before as a cause.

For let the mind have ever fo much power to act upon herfelf, either by predetermination, or coexiftent election, fuch her acting is an action as much as acting upon the limbs, and the freedom of it must be tried by the fame rules: for as I have freedom of action fo long as there lies no bar or obstacle against using my bodily powers in fuch manner as my Will fhall

60

fhall direct, whatever caufes may incline me to employ them one particular way; fo have I freedom of Will while nothing hinders, but that fuch volition fhall take place as I predetermine or elect, whatever may give occafion to my fo determining or electing. For Liberty bears no connection with any thing antecedent ^a to the operation of that power

* Chryfippus and the Stoics, 2s we find in Tully de Fato, placed the freedom of Will in its independance on all external or antecedent caufes. Yet they claimed this freedom as the natural privilege of man; and held at the fame time, that all his actions, even the minuteft of them, were fated. How they reconciled thefe two opinions, it is difficult to guefs.

Their miltake feems to have proceeded from want of diftinguifhing between efficient, and final caufes, the former whereof, being antecedent, deftroy free agency, which yet may well confift with the latter. A cannon-ball has no efficacy to beat down a rampart, unlefs what it receives from the powder, which therefore is an efficient antecedent caufe; and confequently, the action of the ball muft be neceffary. But if you defire your friend to pull down the window-fafh, you give no efficacy to his arm, for he does it entirely by his own ftrength, therefore his action is free: yet your requeft was the motive, without which he would not have done it; fo you are the antecedent, and external caufe of what he does.

whofe liberty we enquire into, but folely with what fhall follow after it, and with the removal of all obftruction which might prevent it from taking effect: therefore may well confift with caufes prior to fuch operation, and with the dominion of that Providence whofe difpofal those caufes lie under.

Thus while we can keep a Disputant to any one fettled point, one stated case of acting, or willing, we shall manage well enough with him ; but men are apt to dodge about the post, alledging, that we may will as we choose, and choose if we will, without understanding themselves in the use of those terms, or fettling the distinction between them; but one moment taking them for fynonimous, and the next for different acts producing one another. Whereas if we fix the meaning of choice to a predetermination, then in fuch cafes where our determination stands confined to certain limits, or we are compelled to take a courfe contrary to that we determine, our volitions; and confequently our

7I

our actions depend upon the caufes applying fuch force or reftraint: but in cafes where we remain perfectly free to profecute whatever we may determine upon, they depend upon the motives occurring to our judgement, or imagination in making the determination, or upon our former cares in forming the condition of our mind; which cares depended upon the like caufes, and fo on as far as the Will was concerned, until you come to fome first determination, or act of the mind to which there was no other act preceding b.

§. 18. As to the coexistent elective power felf-moving and independent on all caufes, whether

^b Which act must depend upon external causes: and confequently fo must all fubsequent volitions dependant thereon.

² Our Author's zeal against the freewill of indifference urges him to take every occasion of aiming a ftroke at it : but his principal attack is carried on in the Chapter of Satisfaction, where in conjunction with Mr. Locke, he has purfued it to every corner, and fubterfuge under which it might take refuge. But he conceives that the notion of the Will acting without motives.

whether of external objects, motives of judgement and imagination, or prior determinations of our own, if this could once be well established, then farewell to all prudence, deliberation, and dependance upon our own conduct, and that of other people: for what avails it to contrive a plan

motives, took rife from there being many of them latent, unknown even to ourfelves; for it is a common remark, that nothing is more deceitful or unfathomable than the heart of man; and from there being many of them fo transient that we cannot obferve them; befides that the taftes and defires of men being infinitely various, we often find them acting upon inducements, which would not have been fuch to ourfelves, therefore fuppofe they had none for their proceeding.

Nor need we wonder at his zeal againft indifference, becaufe that doctrine once eftablifhed would overthrow his whole fyftem; which contains an examination of the feveral fpecies of motives weighing with the mind, the manner of their being generated and introduced to the thought, and the methods of providing ourfelves with fuch as fhall be moft falutary, and conducive to happinefs: in all which he apprehends that Science, reported anciently to have defcended from heaven, the knowledge of ourfelves, to confift. And his theology depends in great part upon the influence of motives: for he conceives 'tis by their intervention alone, that the government of Providence over the moral world may

plan of my measures ever so wifely, to inculcate falutary maxims upon my mind, to nourish fentiments of honour, or duty, or moral fenses for my guidance, if I may afterwards chance to elect the wildest, and most extravagant actions in defiance of all reason, or inclination, or former resolutions to the contrary? or how can I depend that my best and dearest friend will not murder me, while there is a hazard that he may elect in opposition to all the judgement and difcretion in his head, the fentiments and defires in his heart?

may be explained; and our expectations in a future life, upon any tolerable grounds, ascertained. For we can difcover nothing in all vifible nature likely to affect us hereafter, nor can we know any thing of the manner wherein we shall be disposed of otherwise than by fo much as we may difcover of the character of that Being, who prefides over all nature, as well visible as invisible. But the character of an Agent is denominated by the views and motives wherewith he conducts himfelf. Therefore unless we conceive God likewife to act upon motives, and take final caufes under our contemplation, we can gather nothing fatisfactory, by the light of reason, concerning our future condition : but the profpect will lie dark, uncertain, and difmal before us.

74

But fuch terrors as thefe the most zealous devotees of an elective power do not lie under; they depend upon men's acting conformably to their characters; if they know a hardened villain, they make no question of his electing acts of violence, injury and distingther whenever opportunity shall ferve, and confide in themselves for making just and wise elections in their future conduct.

What then occasions the difference between man and man? for there must be fome cause of the moral character, some account to be given why we know what use each perfon will make of his elective power. The difference, fay they, lies in the Will itfelf, which has a peculiar bent, or ply, or I know not what, different from that of another perfon: the villain has a perverseness of Will, therefore will always choofe perverfely; and they themfelves a rectitude of Will, fo of course they will choofe rightly and wifely. But whence got they this I know not what in their Will? was it innate? was it the natural conftitution

conftitution of their mind? Then they ought to blefs the Author of their nature, who gave them this happy conftitution on creating them. But no, this must not be the cafe; for they will lofe all merit of their rectitude, unless it was of their own acquiring; therefore they gave this right Ply to their Wills themfelves by their former cares, and industry, and right management of their elective power. Be it fo; for we are in the humour to admit every thing they pleafe to affume; ftill we must afk, what moved them to fuch right management? it could not be the Ply of their Will; for if this were acquired, they could not have it before they acquired it, nor could they derive from thence their choice of the right methods taken in the acqui-What then, did they light upon fition. those methods by mere chance? I do not fuspect they will fay this; for this would make Virtue nothing more than a lucky hit, which one Simpleton might fumble upon as well as another. If then their choice had a fource, there remains no other we

we can guels befides education, example, company, the temperament of their body, ftate of their mental organization^b, objects furrounding them, events touching their notice, and the like; caufes antecedent and external to the mind electing, under the direction of that power whom they muft acknowledge to govern all things external.

§. 19. Upon the whole, we may conclude Freedom, in whatever light we place

^b A kind of technical term, employed by our Author, to denote a fet of organs composed of very fine corporeal fubftance, used by the mind as her inftrument in meditation, when retired from all external objects. For he conceives the faculty of thinking, or reasoning, not a primary property of the mind, but a refult from her composition with a certain fystem of matter; and supposes pure created spirit no more a thinking, than it is a walking, or a speaking substance. He allows indeed it can always think, whenever united to a proper organization; and so it can always walk or speak, whenever united to a body having legs, or organs of speech: but when removed from all matter, it can perform neither function, for want of inftruments to act with, materials and objects to act upon.

These organizations, detached from their gross bodies, were the vehicles he found inhabiting the' vehicular state, when transported thereinto in the vision.

it, ·

it, or to whatever power, whether real or imaginary, apply it, by no means repugnant, to the operation of prior caufes moving us to the exercise of that power, nor to the dominion of Providence, having all those caufes and their caufes at disposal. So that the Plan of Providence may well take effect without infringing a tittle upon our Liberty: events which neither our judgement, nor our appetite would incline us to produce, are placed out of our power, and entrusted in the hands of other agents, fo come to pass by neceffity with respect to us; the returns of fummer and winter do not depend upon our option, bécaufe we might be apt to choose a perpetual fpring: but wherever God thinks proper to employ us in executing any part of his plan, there needs only to give us the powers, the talents, the opportunities, the judgements, the motives requifite, and we shall compleat the lines allotted us by the exercife of our freedom.

So far as you can penetrate into a man's . fentiments, and defires, and have the pro-

3

per

per objects at command, you may put him upon any work you shall require: if money be his idol, and you have enough to bribe him, you may make him do whatever you pleafe; if he make his belly his god, you may draw him from Millbank to Radcliffebigbway by an exquisite entertainment; or if good nature be his ruling principle, you may employ him in any kind office you shall want. Your politicians know how to turn the paffions of men independent on their authority to ferve their defigns: and the Divine Politician may do this more compleatly, not only as he knows perfectly the fecrets of all hearts, but as he gave them that understanding, and those appetites which determine the colour of their actions; and we need not doubt of his having given them fuch as will effectually' answer the purposes intended by them.

In fome few inftances where we know the hearts of men, we can effect our purpofes with them as furely as we can with any corporeal inftruments in our hands: if you want to give a ball, or an entertainment,

tainment, 'tis but fending an invitation to perfons fond of these diversions, and you will have your company refort to you of their own free choice, nor could you bring them more effectually, if you had the authority of an abfolute monarch over them; fo that in this inftance you govern their motions either to Hickford's, or the Apollo near Temple-Bar, or your own dining-room, without the least impeachment of their liberty. And we have a prefent example before our eyes of a monarch, who having the love of his fubjects, can by their free fervices refift the combined efforts of the mightiest despotic powers upon earth. Nor can Despotism itself do any great matters without aid of Free Will: for rewards, honours, and encouragements, those engines of free agency, contribute more to the valour of armies, than any fcourges of punishment, or peremptory edicts concluding, For fuch is our Will.

Since then experience teftifies, that man can make fo much use of liberty towards accomplishing his defigns, why should we fcruple

fcruple to think the fame of God in a larger extent? for he not only has all the objects in his power which touch the fprings of action, but fabricated the fprings themfelves, and fet them to receive what touches they fhall take.

§. 20. But we judge of the workings of Providence by our own narrow way of proceeding; we take our measures from time to time as the expedience of them occurs to our thoughts, and then must make what use we can of the materials or instruments before us, be they fuch as exactly fuit our purpofe, or not'; and even if we had the making of our inftruments, yet not always knowing what we shall want to do with them, we should often find them inconvenient for our fervice : nor is it unfrequent that the works we performed. yesterday stand in the way of those we are to perform to-day, becaufe new fchemes and new occasions of employing ourfelves occur to us perpetually a. In

^a It is not eafy for us to form any conception of the manner of God's working, unlefs by analogy with our

own.

own. Now when we act providently for the future, it is by fome operation upon the things about us, to produce effects that would not otherwise have enfued : for when things fall of themfelves into the train we defire, there is no room for our activity or prudence to interfere, nor have we any thing more to do, than wait the event. And in this cafe we may fcarce be able to fatisfy a by-stander, of their lying under our disposal, unless by making some alteration in their motions, to convince him of our power. In like manner, we look for the manifestation of a Providence, in extraordinary events, and fuch are commonly produced by those who would enforce the belief of one': as if there were not fufficient evidence in the ordinary courfes of nature, while the proceeds in her ufual channel of fecond caufes. But we fhould confider that the cafe is different between God, and ourfelves : there are innumerable causes in act around us, which we did not fet at work; nor have our activity and contrivance ' any other object than what little alterations we can make among them. The woods would grow, and the rivers run, had the earth been never inhabited; but when we fee the one cut into regular glades, or the other divided into canals, hollowed along through higher ground, we know the hand of man has been buly among them, and in general, the marks of human industry are found only in fuch works, as, would not have been performed by rude nature. But nature could not have begun any courfe, unless put into it by the divine appointment; nor could fecond caufes have proceeded to act in any manner, without an energy and direction received from the first. Therefore their operations are an evidence of his power; and their productions, ferving the uses of man, an evidence of his Providence, equally convincing with that of extraordinary

G

8 r.

traordinary events, to an attentive obferver, taking lit the confideration of final caufes; without which, neither evidence would have 'any avail. For what do we fee in the remarkable changes of wind contributing to bring on the Revolution. The winds vary every day, nor can we gather any thing from the particular variations happening at that time, unlefs we fuppofe God to have had in view the deliverance of these kingdoms from Popery and arbitrary power. What shall we fay to the many caufes concurring at the Reformation? The wilful and imperious temper of the Monarch, fubmiffive disposition of the people, tired out by long wars between the two roles; obftinacy of the Roman Pontiff, quarrels between foreign Princes, allowing them no leifure to interfere? How is the hand of Providence difcernible in all this, without the idea of a gracious defign to refcue our forefathers and ourfelves from papal tyranny and fuperfition? And with fome fuch idea we may difcern the fame hand in the powers of nature, whereof we have continual experience. For the fertility of foils, the rife and descent of vapours, the vicifitudes of featons, the curious structure of vessels and fibres in the tree yielding fruit after his kind, and the herb after his kind, whofe feed is in itfelf, indicate a provident concern and contrivance for the fuftenance of animals, exerted at the creation. The progress of arts, manufactures, and fciences; the advancement of knowledge, and those accomplishments rendering nations more civilized, befpeak a kind regard for mankind, and an admirably wife provision; made at the beginning, enabling them, by the use of their natural talents, and the materials prepared to exercise them upon, to rife from the rude and favage fimplicity of ancient times,

to

In like manner we vulgarly imagine^b God acting occafionally, and taking up purpofes

to their prefent better policied, and better accommodated fituation. And as thefe advantages still tend to further improvement, they denote the like regard for the future race of men who fhall fucceed us while the world endures. Therefore we need not hunt about for ftrange incidents, and uncommon phenomena, to fatisfy us of a providence, which rather wants fuch testimonies to awaken our attention, than convince our understanding. Even miracles themselves were in ancient language called Signs and Wonders; and the very word by its derivation imports, foniething exciting our admiration; nor were we to fee them worked ourfelves, could we effeem them inftances of greater power than appear in the flated laws of nature. Neither could we fuppole God employing them as neceffary means, without which he was not able to have effected his purpose : but rather in condescension to the dulnefs of our apprehenfions, which might have overlooked the purpofe, had he compleated it by lefs ftriking means. But it would be better for us, if we could fo clear our mental eye, as that it might fee by the common light; for it argues a defect in the optics, not to difcern objects without an extraordinary glare call upon them. Befides that those who are over fond of these glares, run a great hazard of meeting phantafms and illufions among them.

^b And this imagination, though reprefented here in an unfavourable light, does not deferve to be difcountenanced, as being the beft fuited to common capacity. For the plain man can never totally banifh the idea of

G 2

chance

84

purposes he had not thought of before until a concurrence of circumstances rendered them expedient: we apprehend him as having turned the numerous race of men loofe into the wide world, endowed them with various powers, talents, appetites, and characters, without knowing precifely, or without caring what they will produce: we allow him indeed to have formed the main lines of a plan; but left large vacancies between to be filled up by chance, whofe wild workings lie under his controul to divert their courfe when they would interfere with the ftrokes of his pencil; for the eye of Providence watches over the motions of human creatures, and when he fees them running counter to his defigns, he turns them afide, or guides them by his fecret influence to co-operate therewith.

chance out of his fyftem, nor understand the government of Providence, otherwise than by a constant vigilance over the workings of second causes, and occasional interpositions to rectify whatever happens to run amiss: neither does he see wherein this idea derogates in any-wise from the divine Power, or Wisdom, or Omniscience.

Now

Now confidering the vaft variety of humours, the difcordant aims and interefts among mankind, it must be acknowledged that the government of the world, in this view of it, could not be administered without either continual miraculous interpofitions in the motions of matter, or compulsions and restraints upon free Agency, giving our volition another turn than it would take from the motives prefent before us, or causing other motions to arise in our limbs, and thoughts in our minds, than our prefent volition would naturally produce.

But when we reflect that even the wanton gambols of chance muft refult from agents and caufes originally fet at work by the Almighty, when we call to mind his infinite Wildom and Omnifcience which nothing can efcape, nothing perplex or overload, it feems more congruous with that boundlefs attribute to imagine that no fingle, nor moft diftant effect of the powers and motions he gave was overlooked, no chafms or empty fpaces left in his defign: G_3 but

but that upon the formation of a world ^e he laid a full and perfect plan of all the operations that fhould enfue during the period of its continuance.

And what interpolitions there are (for I would leave every one to his own opinion concerning the frequency, or rarity of them

· Not creation of the world, as any other perfon would have expressed it. For our author, though far from a Free-thinker, in the modern fense of the word, that is, a lover of opposition against received tenets, has endeavoured all along to maintain a freedom and openness of thought. But it is dangerous truffing to human reafon, which has unluckily led him into a whimfical and unorthodox notion, that this world we inhabit is not the only one God ever created, nor the feveral species of animals falling within our notice, the only living works of his hands: and that after certain periods, the worlds now fubfifting may be diffolved, and new ones fabricated out of the materials. Nay, his fondnefs for the maxim, Nothing made in vain, will not fuffer him to admit any waftes, or vacancies in nature : but he fupposes, in his chapter of the Mundane Soul, that all fpace, not occupied by body, may be replete with fpiritual fubftance, to whom the particles of matter, floating therein, may ferve for objects of perception, and fubjects of action, and whofe miniftry may be employed in carrying on the courfes of nature according to the laws prefcribed for them, or perhaps in forming new worlds upon the plans contrived by infinite Wifdom'. Strange ! to what wild lengths

them^a) how much foever they may operate fecretly to us, were not fudden expedients

lengths of fpeculation a lively fancy will fometimes carry people ! But my Friend's enthuliafm is excufable, as proceeding from a commendable principle: for he conceives it would give a higher idea of the magnificence of our Creator, to imagine his great kingdom the univerfe fully peopled, to fuppofe innumerable hofts of fpirits receiving continual fupplies of happinefs from his inexhauftible bounty, and praifing him inceffantly by that beft of facrifices, more acceptable than the fat of lambs, an active and willing obedience to his commands, and an unwearied diligence in executing his laws, as well ordinary as extraordinary.

On communicating this note to Mr. Search, who is ever follicitous that none of his vagaries fhould do hurt to any body, he defired me to caution fuch of my Readers as may chance to catch the enthulialin from him, that they give way to it no further than while it may warm their hearts, or raife their ideas, in those feafons only, wherein speculation is proper; but to throw it wholly afide when they enter into the common transactions, and common conversations of life; left-they meet the mishap of that Aftronomer who gazing at the ftars as he went along, faw nothing of the ground before him, and fo plunged headlong into, a miry ditch : and above all, to beware of fancying themfelves having an intercourfe, or being in any difcoverable manner affected, with the fpiritual fubstance wherewith he fuppofes them on all fides clofely furrounded.

^d Mr. Search, from the beginning of his enquiries, has proceeded folely upon the fund of natural reafon;

G 4

dients to answer unforeseen emergencies, but contained in the original plan, which was purposely so framed as to need his interposing hand when, and where, and as often

not that he means to depreciate the treasures afforded by Revelation, but having not had the reading fufficient for qualifying him to examine the evidences of it, and being defirous of going to the bottom in every part of his work, as being to deal with perfons who will not fuffer him to take any thing upon truft, he thought himfelf intitled to build only upon fuch ground as he found in his poffeffion, to which no man would controvert his right of entry. So he fet out with the examination of human Nature ;he then proceeded to contemplate the courses of things around us, fo far as they fell under our cognizance or observation; and from thence to gather what could be difcovered with reafonable affurance, concerning the Author of Nature. He is now returning downwards from the idea of God to the idea of those of his works remaining to us invisible : which are not to be counted matters of . mere speculation, being fuch wherein we ourselves are likely within a few years to have concern. In this part of his progress he is arrived at Providence, the title of his last preceeding chapter, wherein he entertains fo large an idea of the divine Skill and Omnifcience, as to conceive it poffible, in theory, that God might have compleated his universe from everlafting, and refted ever fince from all his works ; having formed nature once for all in fuch admirable contrivance, that the might run her appointed courses for ever, with_ out needing any further touch of his hand; the mun-

Ί

.....

dane

often as he predetermined to apply it. But in those parts wherein he has thought proper to employ us as his instruments for executing them, to controul us in the exercise

dane foul, or fpiritual fubftance, being provided with activity fufficient to repair the continual decays of motion among matter, occafioned by the collifion of bodies. On the other hand, he did not find it incongruous with his notions of the Deity, to imagine him, in his first work, purposely leaving fomething for himfelf afterwards to do; and laying his fchemes broken in fome parts, that there might be room for further application of his power, at fuch times, and in fuch manner, as he in his wifdom judged proper. So the queftion, Whether interpolition or none, being equally tenable in theory on both fides, remains to be decided by observation of facts. But he can find no politive evidence (bating those recorded in facred Writ, which he cannot take into confideration, as being befide his plan) to fatisfy him of an interpofition, later than the formation of this earth, and the planetary fystem: fince which, as far as the eye of reason can difcern. God feems to have refted from his works. Yet he does not defire to hinder others from believing frequent interpofitions, made every day, or every hour of the day, if they fee convincing proofs of them : hoping they will indulge him in retaining his own opinion, until he fhall have fufficient lights afforded him to difcern the truth. And he wifhes every one might be allowed the like liberty, without bringing a difcredit upon himfelf from those whom the use of it carries a different way. For he thinks men by much too hafty and

exercife of our powers would be to defeat his own defigns, by diffurbing the operation of those causes himself had chosen for the accomplishment of them.

Thus

and fevere upon one another in their cenfures of Prophanenefs and Superfition; the fame notions being fuch to one, which are not fo to his neighbour, according to their different apprehensions. The feries of causes and events has been compared of old to a golden chain, hanging down from heaven, whereon the earth and elements, with all their contents, whether gods, or men, or animals, or vegetables, are fuspended.' Now we all agree that this chain is upholden by Almighty Power grafping it at the uppermoft link; but which is that uppermost Ink, we greatly differ, and must necesfarily do fo while one man can fee further, to count more links than another. To make the figure more appofite to our purpofe, we will fuppofe the chain branched out into innumerable fmaller ones, fuftaining their respective weights among the productions of nature, and iffues of fortune. Then in proportion as men have accustomed themselves to look at distant objects, they will acquire a more or lefs piercing fight; and confequently trace all, or fome, or a few only of these little chains to the principal. But wherever they lofe the connection, they must place a separate finger at the top of what remains, or the weight will have nothing to fupport it. Therefore the plain man is not superstitious in conceiving a multitude of interpositions, because without them he cannot conceive how the weight fhould be upholden by Almighty Power : neither is the fludious man prophane in rejecting them, becaufe

Thus he governs all things in heaven and earth by power and wifdom conjointly, matter by neceffity and impulfe, brutes by fenfe and inftinct, the bleffed fpirits above by

becaufe he difcerns the whole fuftained by one effort of that power. For prophanenels is the refting in fecond caufes without regard to the first; and superfition the calling in omnipotence needlefly; which must neceffarily vary its form among mankind, as one perfon's needs differ from those of another. But it is recommended to every man to remove the finger of God from him as far as poffible, provided he never let it go out of fight : for in fo doing he will difcern more of the divine Wildom, becaufe there is none in doing every thing by dint of force and authority. Were God to maintain us by raining manna from heaven as we wanted it ; this would not difplay his wifdom, like the various provisions he has made for fupplying us with food by natural means. Were he to fend his angel every morning to declare what each of us was to do for the day, and fhower down his irrefiftible Grace, to carry us through temptations that might urge us to difobey him wilfully; we fhould acknowledge his power, and his goodnefs, but fee nothing of his wifdom. But when he turns his numerous race of men abroad with various and difcordant paffions, inclinations, interefts, talents, views, and opinions, fo admirably adjusted together, and distributed among them. as that they fullfil his will, in the accomplifhment of his purpofes, while they think of nothing lefs: whoever has fense and observation enough to understand this, must adore the wife contriver of fo complicated

by fignifications of his will, which they gladly and freely fet themfelves to fulfil, man partly by neceffary agents affecting him, partly by laws, reftrictions, apprehenfions of mifchief and danger controuling him, and partly by leaving him to his free choice in following fuch portion of underftanding

a scheme. Now there is a justice to be observed between the attributes, nor must we suffer our zeal for one to magnify it at the expence of another. Therefore let us all, according to the flate of our respective imaginations, caft them into fuch fcenes, as may give us the fullest representation of the divine government in all its parts, without diffurbing one another in our manner of laying out the prospect. Let not the devout religious man judge hardly of the rationalist, for afcribing all to nature and fecond caufes, becaufe he fees God at the birth of nature, planning down her courfes, and giving fpring to the caufes that produce events of all kinds, as well certain as cafual. Neither let the latter deny his lefs penetrating neighbour the benefit of a perpetual interpolition, neceflary to him for comprehending the administration of affairs throughout the world; because the powers of nature appear to him as felf-moving, and the mazes of fortune ftruck out every day afresh by the blind ramblings of chance. And I believe if any perfon of a ferious turn will recollect the fystem of Providence he entertained in his youth, he will find it abounding in interpositions, which as he grew in knowledge and experience have gradually decreafed.

standing and appetites as himself has allotted him.

§. 21. Nor need we fancy ourfelves always in fhackles, becaufe every moment under the dominion and conduct of Providence, for it has been fhewn that Liberty has no concern with caufes antecedent to the exercife of our power, but folely with what might ftand in our way upon fuch exercife: if I can do what I will, I have freedom of action, no matter how I came to will this or that particular employment: if I can choofe as I will, I have freedom of choice, no matter what induced me to make one choice preferably to all others.

What then, are we mere puppets, actuated by fprings and wires, becaufe it was given us both to will and to do? By no means; for when they are given us, we have as full and free liberty to ufe them both, as if they had fallen upon us by chance, or we had made them for ourfelves. If my father left me a good portion, I can do the fame with it, and have as free difpofal

pofal of it, as if I had made the gold my felf by transmutation with the Philosopher's ftone *: and if he brought me by the cares of his education, from a lavish temper to prudence

^a Ned was led into this thought by one of his own foibles: for you must know, he has long fince gotten a mighty notion of the Philosopher's stone; only inflead of transmuting metals, he wants to transmute error into truth with it. For being of a peaceable disposition, he does not love to overthrow, fo much as to transmute. The process whereby he thinks to effect this is, by diffinctions, illustrations, constructions, explanations, and other methods known only to Adepts, to pick out the groß particles from fome doctrine that has hitherto been found poifonous, and infuse others in their room, thereby giving it a contrary quality. The curious Reader may find him exhibiting a specimen of his art by and by upon prescience, fate, and predeftination ; which from a lumpifh-faturnine fubstance, that used to lie heavy upon the digestion, generating black bile, damping the fpirits, benumbing the active powers, and fending up frightful phantoms to the brain, he will attempt to turn into an aurum potabile, that shall fit eafy upon the stomach, and enliven and invigorate like a falutary cordial. It was his reliance upon this art, that made him keep the former part of his works in referve: for having picked up fome base metals in his researches, he chose not to iffue them forth, until he could find means of tranfmuting them properly into current sterling.

When I have expoftulated with him upon the folly of hunting after the Philosopher's stone, he justified

himfelf

prudence and œconomy, this does not impeach my liberty to fquander it all away.

Nor have we reafon to diffurb ourfelves with imaginations of a thraldom from fe-

himfelf by the general practice. For, fays he, there are multitudes of Trafmutors up and down every where; but the vexation is, they go to work the wrong way, converting gold into bafe metals. The Papifts, Fanatics, and Methodifts, have transmuted the golden ftreams of religion into a kind of Mercury fublimate, that infinuates throughout the conflitution, and intoxicates the brain; making men furious or foolifh, . curfing, damning, and worrying one another to pieces, or giving up their perfons, their effates, and their fenfes to the difpofal of their leaders; leaving common fenfe to run after illuminations, and turning the fancies of men into the counfels of God. The Freethinkers have transmuted sterling reason into tinfel witticism, productive of felf-conceit, and an affurance of victory; for when you begin to joke with a Difputant, you do not deferve to be talked with any longer; fo your argument remains unanfwerable, and yourfelf master of the field. Our political writers have trafmuted liberty into licentiousness, and the bare furmise of an infamous peace being intended, into a certain fact, for which a minister ought to be hanged, drawn, and quartered, in the judgement of all the zealous patriots of our tea-tables, coffee-houfes, and ale-houfes. Since then, fays he, thefe operators have met with fuch fuccefs in the world, it fhows there is fomething in the art: and if they have used it perverfely,

cret influences, and unfeen fprings, when those that are manifest and seen do not work upon us by constraint; for sometimes we may discern the influence that guides us, and yet find no thraldom in following whither it leads.

How much of our employment depends upon the natural appetites of hunger and thirst? You may pretend indeed that these are

verfely, why fhould not I turn it to better fervice? Nor, if I can produce a fingle grain of good metal, out of any drofs, ought I to incur blame for contributing my mite towards enriching the commonwealth of learning.

Befides, fays he, I find the Rofycrucian art very convenient for my private ufe: for I want no index expurgatorius. I may read Spinoza, Machiavel, Tindal, or Wefley's Journals, with fome emolument. For if I cannot do like Virgil, who was faid to pick up gold out of the dunghill of Ennius, yet I may imitate the arch-chymift, Sun, who every day transmutes that filthy substance into rofes and lilies, wheat, barley; and wholesome vegetables. Indeed there are fome stubborn subjects eluding all the powers of chymistry: such as our weekly Differtations, popular Declamations, and retailings of Scandal and Obloquy against the Great: for they contain no folid substance at all, and it is impossible to make any thing out of whipped fullabub, or mere colouring.

are acts of neceffity, becaufe we muft eat, or flarve^b, but follow men to their meals, and you will not fee one in a thoufand that eats becaufe he muft, but becaufe he likes it; which of us ever fits down to table by compulfion, or feels himfelf conftrained to cut the joint before him, or perceives his tongue moved by ftrings like a puppet when he calls for a glafs of wine ?

What shall we fay to the mutual propenfity between the fexes, another main spring in the hand of God, by which he preferves the race of men upon earth? How many under twigs, what fashions, contrivances, amusements, accomplishments, grow from that stem? but wherein does it check or overschadow human liberty?

^b In a former chapter, having occafion to obferve how commonly we miftake our motives of action, he fays, If any body fhould afk, why you take your flated meals of breakfaft, dinner, and fupper, I warrant you would anfwer, Becaufe I cannot live without eating. But if this were our real motive, we fhould hardly play fo good a knife, or put about the glafs fo brifkly as we do; for we might keep ourfelves alive with a great deal lefs trouble.

Do

Do boys and girls meet together by compulfion, or choice? Is the Mifs under a force when the culls among her trinkets with curious toil to tiff herfelf out in the moft engaging manner, or teazes pappa for money to buy a new-fathioned filk? Is the Beau compelled againft his Will to practife winning airs before the glafs, or employ for whole hours all the thought withinfide his noddle to bepowder and becurl the outfide?

How strongly does parental instinct operate upon us! 'Tis by this channel that God transmits arts and sciences, education, estates, conveniencies of life, knowledge, and old experience from generation to generation. In this we see the finger of Providence and feel its potent touches d, yet feel no limitation in our liberty therefrom : for what parent does not willingly go about the provisions he makes for his children,

^c My friend, like other Philosophers, is a little flovenly in his dress; which makes him the readier to give a fly wipe at the contrary character.

^d Honeft Ned fpeaks experimentally in this place; for nobody is more fenfible to these touches than he.

or

or finds himfelf under any other direction than his own choice and judgement in the application of his cares for their advantage, or perceives himfelf moved by clock-work to procure any little toy, or diversion for them?

§. 22. Our powers of action stand limited to a certain extent of ground, but within the enclosure we may ramble about as we pleafe to take our pasture, or our pastime: sometimes there are restraints hanging over us, which confine us to particular walks, obligations and duties to be fulfilled, authority to be obeyed, wants to be fupplied, neceffaries of life to be provided, and it behoves us to regard thefe restrictions, or mischief will enfue: but in many of our hours we have no limitations upon our conduct, and then we may move eafily and lightly without the weight of any fecret force or impediment encumbering IIS.

Nor need we fear left we may defeat the purpofes of God, or make any breaches

H 2

in

100

in the plan of his Providence; for he knew what uses we would make of our Liberty, and has provided his plan accordingly. Let the Princes run madly into broils, and the Grecians fuffer, the Will of *Jove* is fulfilled by their madnefs, and will be, whatever conduct man shall purfue. Therefore we have but our own Will 'to take care of; only let us not confult folely

* Here understood, the Will of Inclination. Our Author has spent a whole chapter in defence of a doctrine that may feem heretical, both in natural and revealed Religion: for his fubject being the fummum bonum, or ultimate end of action, he places it folely in every man's own happines. But happines is the aggregate of pleafures; and pleafures, except fome few of them, which fall upon us unexpectedly from fenfation, confift in the gratification of our respective defires; for what pleafes one perfon, may give pain to another, who has a contrary tafte. So a man has nothing elfe to do, than fludy how he may beft gratify his defires. Now this looks like an exhortation to pursue every sudden whim as it starts up in our fancy. and will be so taken, until we shall see how he has transmuted it. For he fays, this is not the way to gratification : he owns, indeed, that defire is the beft friend we have; because but for it, our lives would pais infipid and irkfome; neverthelefs he exhorts men not to forget their absent friends, nor gratify one defire

folely our prefent Will and Fancy, but pay a due regard to what we may will tomorrow; and in our deliberations and execution of the prudential measures for procuring

defire prefent to their thoughts, at the expence of another that may follicit by and by. But when they have divers measures of conduct lying before them for their option, and fland in a fituation to difcern all the confequences refulting therefrom, let them chufe fuch as will procure them most gratification upon the whole. If they fit down to a table plentifully ftored with highdreffed viands, and find in themfelves a ftrong inclination to eat unmeafurably; while doing this they add to their happines; therefore fo far they do well. But what if fuch indulgence will bring on fickness of ftomach, incapacity for bufinefs, conversation, or other diversion, hurt their fortune, or their reputation, or sit heavy upon their confcience : confequences they will vehemently diflike when falling upon them? Or, tho' they do not foresee these effects, yet are warned against them by the moral fenfe, or rules of fobriety founded upon the general obfervation of their expedience ? If they still indulge, they are very ill providers for gratification. A true lover of money will make any fhift rather than call in what he has flanding out at interest on good fecurity: and a true lover of pleafure will undergo any felf-denial, that tends to greater enjoy-For 'tis the want of knowing the value of ment. money, that makes the young Spend-thrift encumber his reversions for the fake of raising a fum in hand : and 'tis the like want of knowing the value of happiIOI

nefs,

curing what we shall will to have another time, we may proceed with the same freedom as if there were no superiour power ' over us.

nefs, that puts the voluptuous upon mortgaging their future expectations for a little prefent indulgence.

He observes likewise, that gratification being relative to defire, there are two ways of attaining it : either by procuring the objects of our defire, or by, turning defire upon the objects in our power, or which may be convenient for us. If I have port in my cellar, but with for claret; or if I have claret, but have likewife the gout, to which it would be hurtful; I shall be gratified alike, either by ordering in claret in the one cafe, and getting rid of my gout in the other; or by bringing myfelf to a liking of the liquor I have and may drink without inconvenience. Now men are ready enough of their own accord to-purfue the former of these two methods: so the Moraliff need only exhort them to the latter. And it becomes the Mifer in happiness to take that of the two upon every occasion which he finds the most feasible, or likely to yield him the greateft income. If he has money enough to fpare for the claret, or a fure fpecific against the gout, he will pleafe his palate: but if he knows not where to get either of thefe, he will enure his mind to enjoy herfelf over a glass of common port.

^b He does not mean, no authority it is incumbent upon us to regard, but no ftronger power able to controul us in the exercise of our faculties.

1

And

And the most useful deliberation we can enter upon, is how to enlarge our freedom, for all are ready enough to allow that Happinefs confifts in liberty to do what we will, nor shall I contradict them, fo they do not restrain Will to that of the prefent moment. We commonly understand by our Will what our Judgement repréfents as most eligible, or our Inclination prompts to as most alluring; and whenever these two coincide, our Will is quite free; therefore fo far as we can bring defire to tally with reason, we shall enlarge the bounds of our liberty; and if we could do this compleatly fo as to make a virtue of every necessity, and a pleafure of every obligation, we fhould never have any reftraint hanging over us, but attain a perfect liberty; becaufe willing always what was right and feafible, we should always do what we would.

And this perfect liberty would more apparently, though not more really coincide with the plan of Providence than that pittance of it we now poffers; for then we H 4 fhould

Foreknowledge.

fhould fulfill the Will of God knowingly, whereas now we fulfill it, but unknowingly, and many times by fetting ourfelves most ftrenuoufly to oppose it,

Foreknowledge.

104

§. 23. And now we might think the controverfy ended, and all difficulties got over, the freedom of Will being fully reconciled with the authority and dominion of God: but the bufy mind of man, ingenious in finding new perplexities to involve itfelf in, will not let us reft quiet fo; but feeing light open upon one fpot, fhifts the fcene to fome other corner, where it may cover itfelf with clouds and obfcurity; and as if fond of flavery, endeavours to derive a title thereto from another quarter, namely, that of Foreknowledge.

For, fay the fine Reafoners, if your actions are foreknown, you can do no otherwife than it is known you will do; fo your hands are tied down to one particular manner of proceeding, nor are you at liberty to take any other than that you shall purfue.

But

Foreknowledge.

But why fo? what connection is there between another's knowledge, and my behaviour? it may poffibly direct his own meafures, but has no influence at all upon mine. You allow that while my actions remain unknown to every body I may be free; what then if after my being in poffeffion of this freedom fome fhrewd Politician fhould difcover what I will do, how does that diveft me of it, in what refpect alter my condition, or by what channel of communication does his difcovery operate upon me?

No, fay they, you miftake the grounds of our objection; we do not affign his knowledge as a caufe of any thing you do, nor pretend it lays any reftraint upon your liberty; we only produce it as an evidence of another reftraint hanging over you; for he could not know how you will behave, unlefs it were certain; therefore his knowing is a proof that you will certainly do as he knows; but what will certainly come to pafs cannot fall out otherwife; fo you have no

Foreknowledge.

TOG

no liberty left, because you cannot do what will never be done.

But how does this alter the cafe ? wherein is the difference between Certainty and Knowledge ? Why yes, the difference lies here, that Certainty is the object of Knowledge, though the may not have caft her eye upon it; therefore is a different thing, as having exifted before it; for your difcovery did not make the Certainty, but prefuppofes it; for the thing was certain before; though you did not know it.

But what fort of thing is this Certainty to which you afcribe fuch irrefiftible force? let us know what rank of Beings to place it under? is it a fubftance? or if a quality or accident, in what fubftance does it refide? for we generally apply it to propositions which are only judgements of the mind. It is no agent, it is no power, nor has any efficacy in its ftate of pre-existence to knowledge; for were it ever so certain the house was on fire, this would influence none of my actions until I know it.

§. 24.

§. 24. If Certainties have any active virtue, it is to generate one another; all our rules of logic flow us that fome truths are fuch in confequence of other truths: if it certainly will rain to-morrow, it is certain there will be clouds in the air; if it be certain the gun I make tryal of will go off, then the flint will certainly ftrike fire; and in general the certainty of Events infers the certainty of all caufes operating to produce them: therefore whatever acts of my Freewill are certain, I muft certainly have the freedom to do them.

We may indeed frame propositions concerning future events, without thinking of the manner how they will come to pass; but remember your own observation, that knowledge does not make certainty, but finds it; much less can any form of words make, or the omiffion of them deftroy it: therefore whether you speak and think of them or no, the same propositions may be applied, and the same certainty belong to the operating causes, be they Force or Free-

Freewill, as to the events, and the certainty of each reciprocally, implies the other.

Suppose you under an engagement to. meet a perfon at any particular place, and have a ftrong inclination to go fomewhere elfe, neverthelefs you have too much honour to break your word; but perhaps the man will fend five minutes hence to release you from the engagement, and then you will go where you like: now if it be certain you shall go there, must it not be equally certain the reftraint will be taken off, and you fet at perfect liberty to follow. your choice? And if any body had affirmed both a thousand years ago, he would have fpoken truth; for while the one remained fortuitous, the other could not be certain: fo likewife in all inftances of free Agency, the certainty of the action cafts a certainty upon the freedom of the Agent; and the certain Foreknowledge of our voluntary proceedings is fo far from overthrowing, that it establishes human liberty. upon a firmer bottom than it has really belonging to it.

For

108

For we may obferve further, that this argument unluckily proves too much; becaufe if whatever shall happen, it be abfolutely impossible that it should not happen; then in such instances wherein we have our freedom, the debarring us the use of it was from all eternity an absolute impossibility, infurmountable even by Omnipotence itself; fo that instead of being dependant in all our motions upon necessary causes, we shall become independent on the first, the supreme Fountain of all power and action.

And for ought I know, the Devil might have employed this fophifm when he rebelled, to prove himfelf his own mafter; for feeling himfelf in poffeffion of freedom, it was always true, that he fhould be free; nor could Omnipotence itfelf prevent his being fo: or he might have beguiled himfelf into his fall, and juftified his difobedience, by arguing in the following manner. If any one had faid before I was made, that I fhould be, he would have fpoken truth; therefore it was certain that

109

Ι

TIO

I fhould be, therefore an abfolute impoffibility that I fhould not be; fo God could not help creating me, nor do I owe any thanks to the Almighty for my existence.

§. 25. What dependance or countenance does this argument deferve? which is fuch a *Drawcanfir* as to cut down both friend and foe; or like a fwivel gun, may be pointed upon any quarter, fore and aft, ftarboard and larboard; and what is worfe, we find it generally, in the hands of floth and depravity, turned against the lawful authority of reason and prudence.

For when men are too lazy to beftir themfelves, or too fond of a foolifh thing to be put afide from it by their cleareft judgement, they then catch hold of this idle pretence, what will be, must be; therefore why need I take pains, or deliberate at all? for my actions will have fome certain iffue, and if certain, it is neceffary, and if neceffary, the event will work itfelf out fome how or other, without my giving myfelf any trouble to compass it.

But

But who ever argues in this manner, when they have fome favourite paffion to gratify? They then can ftudy and contrive, fet all their wits to work, and ufe all their might to accomplifh their defigns : whereas if they think confistently, there is the fame certainty in matters of inclination, as of prudence and duty; whatever they with, must have fome certain iffue one way or other, and is either unattainable in fpite of their utmost endeavours, or will drop into their mouths without their feeking. And thus they may go on to argue themselves out of all activity whatever,' fo as neither to take up the victuals from their plate, or move away from the fire when it burns their fhins.

§. 26. But these fantastical remoras do not obstruct us in the familiar transactions of life, nor do they ever enter into the head of a common man. If a poor fellow has done me fome fignal fervice, and I call to him — Hark ye, *Tim*; do you see that fack of pease in the barn-floor yonder? there

there are a couple of guineas in it fomewhere; if you can find them they are your own. Now I know well enough he will get the money; for he will take out every pea one by one but he will come at it; but I know as well that he cannot find it without a good deal of pains and rummaging.

Suppose one of your profound Speculatifts were by, and should tell him, Why, *Tim*, you need not put yourself in a hurry to go a rummaging; you may as well sit with your nose over the kitchen fire; for *Searcb* knows you will get the money; therefore it is a thing certain, and you must have it whether you do any thing, or no. This logic would hardly prevail upon *Tim* to stop his speed for a moment.

Or fuppofe another fubtile refiner fets the matter in a different light: *Tim*, fays he, is a mere machine in this cafe utterly defitute of liberty; for not only his getting the money, but his rummaging the fack is foreknown; fo his action is certain and neceffary, nor can he help rummaging any more than the great clock can help ftriking. *Tim*

II3

Tim being an arch fellow replies, Ay, but Mafter, for all that I could flay here and never meddle with the fack, if I were fool enough to run the hazard of fomebody elfe getting away the money before me; and if you'll give me three and forty fhillings to try, I'll flow you what I can do.

How many times a day do we foreknow our own actions, and those of other people, yet feel ourselves and perceive them free in the performance? Our liberty is so apparent that the Philosopher with his microscope *, and the Ploughman with his half an eye, can different it diffinctly through the veil of Certainty and Foreknowledge: 'tis only the half-reasoner, who hangs between both,

^a Our Author difcovered his having a Microfcope while at work on his chapter of Satisfaction, on happening for once to fpin a thread fomewhat finer than Mr. Locke. He feemed mightily pleafed with it, as finding it affift him greatly in his tranfmutations; and talked much of it at first, but has not mentioned it a good while until now. Yet he still continues to use it, as the difcerning Reader may perceive, by fome microfcopic observations upon Liberty, upon Agency, I Volency,

· Hefer & Hefer

both, and uses a glass full of flaws, that hunts for it in vain, or sees it confusedly.

§. 27. It is the crinkles in this glass making objects appear double, and reprefenting each individual as two diffinct things, which produces that diffinction urged by fome people between human Prescience and divine, as if one might be compatible with human Liberty, though the other were repugnant.

But why fo? for it is not the party knowing, but the intrinfic certainty of the fact that lays the reftraint: now as man cannot know what is uncertain, fo neither if there were any thing abfolutely fortuitous,

Volency, and Electancy; upon Powers operating, or operated upon, in §. 2, 13, 17, & pa/fim. He fays, this little inftrument is abfolutely neceffary for a Mathematician or a Philofopher; but a common magnifying glafs, fuch as we buy for children to play with, will do well enough for a Freethinker; becaufe it ferves to difcover doubts and objections, that a man with his common fenfes would never think of, and magnifies them fufficiently, but fcarce ever reaches to a folution.

114

II5

could it be foreknown even to God *; therefore Knowledge, wherever refiding, is alike evidence of Certainty.

Very true, fay they, where the knowledge is of the fame kind; but our's is only conjectural; whereas that of God is abfolute: we all confess the human Underftanding fallible at beft, nor ever fo fure of her hits, but there remains a poffibility of her being mistaken, and it is this possibility that opens the door to Liberty.

Here, by the way, I cannot help remarking how ready fome folks are to blow hot and cold with the fame breath, as either ferves the turn: if I happen in company to drop a hint like those suggested in my chapter on Judgement^b, that Certainty, mathematical

² There are fome who hold Eternity a ftanding point with him, and the future to be equally prefent with the current moment: but in this cafe the Knowledge would not be Prescience, but direct Intuition, which does not affect the Argument before us.

^b Where the Author falls into downright Scepticifm : for after having overthrown all Knowledge, except of one thing, which is that we know nothing, he proceeds to take away this too, and proves demonstratively, that

mathematical Certainty, was not made for man, and that we know no more, if fo. much, than the appearances exhibited this prefent moment to our fenfes, and the ideas actually in our thought; I am exclaimed against for an arrant Sceptic, a Visionary, a Trifler, advancing things I do not believe myself. What ! cry they, do not we know certainly that the Judges will fit in Westminster-ball this term; that the Servant will lay the cloth for dinner; that we ourfelves shall go to bed to-night? Yet thefe very people, like crafty Politicians, now the interests of their argument require it, can take the opposite fide, and frike up a coalition with the fallibility of human

that we dont know whether we know any thing or not. For which *Socrates* in the vision compliments him, as being a wifer man than himfelf, who was declared wifeft by the Oracle: for he it feems had fancied he did know that he knew nothing; whereas our Author's greater fagacity had difcovered that he did not know even this.

I need not tell the Reader, he made his efcape out of this dungeon, because he finds him abroad in open daylight, pretending to know several things in the very last Section.

116

Under-

Understanding in her strongest assures. Perhaps the Judges will not sit, for the hall may be swallowed up by an earthquake; perhaps the Servant will not lay the cloth, for he may be struck with an apoplexy; perhaps we shall not go to bed, for the house may take fire. Were these casualties, which depend upon external causes, alledged in diminution of Liberty, they might carry fome weight; but what efficacy they can have to encrease it, I cannot discern with best use of the microfcope.

But waving this, if bare Poffibility may give opening enough to fet us free, this fame Mr. *Liberty* must be a very flender gentleman, to creep in at fuch an augerhole: yet let us confider whether he does get his whole body through, or only thrust in a little finger at most; for we have feen there are degrees of Liberty confistent with a partial Restraint. When I put on my great coat and boots, I can still move my limbs, though not fo freely as before : when in town I have not the fame liberty as in

the

II7

the country; I must not go out in my cap and slippers; I must not carry a bundle under my arm; if *Elizabetha Petrowna*, whom I never faw nor cared for, happens to die two thousand miles off, I must not wear a coloured coat, for fo the great goddefs, *Fashion*, that *Diana* of *Ephefus*, whom all the world worshippeth, ordains; yet she graciously allows me fome latitude in my drefs and motions; for I may go armed with a fword I know not how to use, and faunter away the day in coffeehouses, or spend the night in tossing about a pack of cards, without offence to her delicacy.

Now I believe my Antagonists and I, how flightingly soever we have spoken of human Understanding, shall agree that in some instances our Knowledge grounds upon evidence, which makes it a million to one we are in the right : and since an Event may be probable, as well as certain, though we do not know so much, it must then contain an intrinsic probability independent on our knowledge or conjecture. But

IIG

But this probability, being fo near of kin to certainty, that the acuteft Philosophers could never find a criterion to diffinguish them, may be prefumed to have the family ftrength, though not in equal measure; and if one totally overthrows liberty, the other must fasten a clog upon it proportionable to the degree of the probability; fo that in cafes of the highest affurance we should find ourfelves reduced to the condition of a perfon who should have fo many weights hung about him, that one millionth part added more, would render him uncapable of firring at all.

§. 28. But if this will not do, and they infift upon Probability being totally different from Certainty in kind and efficacy, and that one has no force at all, though the other be irrefistible, let them contemplate an object, wherein they must needs acknowledge both perpetual Freedom and absolute Foreknowledge; for I hope they will not deny God to be perfectly free in all his proceedings. If there I 4 be

be fuch a thing in nature as freedom, where can it refide, if not in the fupreme Author of all powers, to whom there is nothing fuperior that might controul him? Yet I fuppofe they will fcarce imagine all his meafures fudden, and his actions fortuitous, or that he does not know to-day what he will do to-morrow.

But if certainty infers neceffity, then either he forefees no better than we do, that is conjecturally, when he will ftop the torrents of blood that overwhelm *Europe*, the diftreffes, the ruins, the havock and defolation that fpread over land and fea, and reftore peace to Chriftendom, or his hands in the interim remain tied to do it at one precife time, nor is he at liberty to advance the happy event one moment fooner^a. Nay, we fhall not ftop here; for if a proposition had been affirmed from everlafting concerning any work of Providence that has been performed, it would have been true: therefore God from all

* This was wrote before any overtures for a treaty of Pacification were publickly known.

eternity

120

eternity was neceffitated to create and govern his worlds precifely in the manner he has done; and fo, according to the devilifh fine reafoning ufed at the end of §. 24. we are not obliged to him, but to the ironhanded goddefs Neceffity, for our life, our health, our daily bread, and all the bleffings we receive.

Perhaps they will alledge the cafe is different here; for the acts of God are fuch only as he had determined upon himfelf, therefore in performing them he executed his own will: but let them remember, that they placed the neceffity in the intrinfic certainty of the fact, not in the caufés operating to produce it; for if they admit thefe, then the caufe of our free actions being the freedom we have to perform them, will evidence itself, instead of proving our bondage: but, according to them, when a fact is certain, it is neceffary, no matter why, or how, it came to be fo; and equally certain, whether proceeding from the agent's own determination or fome external cause: for if what will be, must be, then whatever God I

God foreknows will be done by himfelf as well as by us, becomes alike certain, nor can even omnipotence prevent it from taking effect^b.

Thus we fee the fame ill luck attends the argument wherever we turn it; for if it proves any thing, it proves more than it fhould; nor can it infringe upon human liberty, without encroaching upon God himfelf.

Neither let them throw in my teeth what I have reported from *Pythagoras* concerning the oath of *Jove*; for this was only a figurative expression, to denote the unchangeableness of the divine nature: if God has fworn, his oath is facred, because we know

^b To this argument might be added another. For I fuppofe every pious man effeems it certain, that God will reward the good and punifh the evil-doer; that he will maintain the laws of nature, not throw all things into confusion, nor annihilate the beings he has created. Thus human preference extends in fome cafes to the divine agency. But if certainty inferred neceffity, then either God muft not be free to dispose of us in what manner he judges proper, or it muft remain totally uncertain how he will use his power.

he

122

he will keep it^c, being not liable, like man, to change his fentiments, or defign one thing to-day and the contrary to-morrow; but nobody imagines him under any compulfion or neceffity, in cafe he could be fuppofed at any time defirous of violating it; fo that when he performs, he acts with the

· Being part of the lecture delivered in the vision. From which oath the laws of nature received their ftability, and the courses of events befalling men their certain appointment. Dacier would have faid, the philofopher took this hint from the covenant made with Noah, that day and night, feed-time and harvest, should . never fail. And our Rofycrucian took the hint from Dacier, to practife with his art chymical upon the fublime mysteries imparted to him. For the Samian fage having broached fo many heathenish inventions of a preexistence, a mundane soul, discerptions and absorptions, transmigrations, eternity à parte ante of created beings, limited duration of punifhments, homogenity of fpirits, their differences refulting from their refpective compofitions with matter, that he was afraid of being thought a bad man himfelf for conforting with fuch wicked company. So he went to work upon his transmuting procefs, wherein he fucceeded fo luckily, that having ventured to read over the whole lecture to'a learned divine, a man of a very good difcernment, he cried out at the conclusion, with a kind of rapturous surprize : Why Search ! you have made - Pythagoras an orthodox Chriftian.

123

fame pure bounty and unlimited freedom as when he promifes.

§. 29. When we examine what gave rife to this notable difcovery of every thing certain being neceffary, we shall find it spring from a mere quibble of words. What you will do, fay they, you must do; for you cannot do otherwife fo long as you are to do that, because you cannot do both. Who doubts it? Therefore I allow this to be matter of neceffity, not of prudence; nor would I recommend it to any man to deliberate, ormake trial, how he shall run and fit still at the fame time, or ride on horfeback while he goes in a coach: but for all that, what ails him that he might not omit the thing he has refolved upon, or will do, and take a contrary course? How fure foever I am of going to bed, still I may fit up all night, if I please, for neither God nor man hinders me; but I know I shall not, becaufe I know it is in my option, and know what I chufe to do: fo my knowledge stands upon my freedom; for if I had it not, I might be compelled to do what

125

what I do not chuse, and my action would be uncertain.

But my Knowledge they fay is only conjectural. What then? does not God know it too? and does not he know likewife, that he has left the iffue to my option? and whether he has given me fo much difcretion as will withhold me from doing a filly thing merely to fhew what I can do? So thefe three points of Knowledge, the Difcretion, the Liberty to ufe it, and the Event, are fo far from overthrowing that they fuftain and ftrengthen one another.

The difficulties we make fpring from our conceiving too narrowly of the divine prefcience; we confider God as foreknowing an event feparately, without knowing, or without contemplating the caufes giving it birth: in this cafe indeed the Foreknowledge must have a fomething, an inexplicable fatality attending it, for elfe it could not be abfolute, becaufe there might fome unforefeen caufe intervene to render it abortive. But the preference of God is univerfal as well as abfolute; when he knows what will

will come to pafs, he knows the caufes himfelf has provided for accomplifhing it, nor can any body who confiders the matter at all imagine him ever ignorant or forgetful of either; nay, he knows the one, becaufe he knows the other : for if we could fuppofe him ignorant of the caufes, he would not know their iffue: therefore in fuch inftances where freedom is one of those caufes, he foreknows that freedom, the motives inclining us to use it, and how those motives will operate; and confequently by the rule infisted on, it is as necessary we fhould enjoy that freedom, as in what manner we fhall employ it.

§. 30. Nevertheless they go on still to urge, that we cannot do otherwise than we shall do, not only because we cannot do both, but because we cannot omit what we certainly shall do, and take another course: for an event that will certainly happen, cannot fail of coming to pass, nor can the contrary take effect; but the divine preficience is an irrefragable evidence of this

cer

126

127

certainty, becaufe if the thing were uncertain, the Foreknowledge could not be abfolute. Now there is no poffibility that God fhould be miftaken; therefore none that any thing foreknown by him fhould not take effect, or the contrary fhould fall out; then it is not poffible for us to omit whatever it is impoffible fhould fail of being done; fo our power is gone; or if we have a natural ability either to do or to omit, we have no liberty to ufe it, being confined to that particular way which is foreknown.

Now if they will pleafe to throw this curious reafoning into the logical form of a fyllogifm, we may chance to fhew them it has four terms, and therefore concludes nothing. Whatever God foreknows, it is impossible the contrary fhould be done; what is impossible to be done, it is out of my power to do; therefore whatever God foreknows, it is out of my power to do the contrary.

I fhall not deny *major* nor *minor*; but if the word *imposible* fhould carry different fenfes as it ftands in either, the whole chain will become a rope of fand, and the confequence

128

fequence limp lame behind. In order to canvafs this point, let us have recourfe to our prefent patronels. Philology, to mark out the feveral uses wherein we employ that term, together with others relative thereto, fuch as, must, may, can, necessary, and the like, both in our familiar and ferious difcourfes.

Polfible, relates originally and most obviously to Power; for things are possible as far as we have power to perform them, but no farther: and if it be asked, Whether it is possible to transmute lead into gold ?- you will understand by the question, whether it is in the power of man, by chymical process, or any other art or contrivance, to effect it.

But we often apply the term where we have nothing of power in our thoughts. Suppofe, in playing at whift, I have only two cards left in my hand, but muft win both tricks to fave the game; my partner leads a trump, and the king was turned up on my left hand, in this cafe I shall put down the ace with hopes of fucceeding, because

it

1.23

it is poffible the king may be alone. Now by poffible, I do not mean in the power of any body, or any thing, to make the king alone, or guarded: if chance ever had any power, flie has executed it as foon as the cards were shuffled and cut, nor has she now any further concern in the affair. Therefore here the term denotes only the contingency of what other card lies in the fame hand with the king, and is relative; for to him who holds the cards it is not poffible they should be any other than what he fees them, though to me who do not fee them, guarded or not guarded are equally poffible.

On the other hand; whoever confiders the pains I have taken on this crabbed fubject, will think it impoffible I should throw my labours into the fire as foon as I have compleated them: not that he thinks any thing of my powers, or fuppofes me to plod on until my arm is fo benumbed that I cannot extend it to the grate, or that I write upon cloth of Afbeftos, which will - not confume in the Flames, but becaufe he К thinks

thinks there is no chance I fhould inftantly deftroy what I have been fo earnest to produce.

Thus Poffible fometimes denotes the Power or Liberty we have to do a thing, as Impoffible does the want of it, and fometimes only the contingency, or our knowledge or ignorance of an event, without the least reference to the powers producing it. There may be different degrees of poffibility in what manner I shall spend my afternoon, according as people know more or lefs of my character, disposition, or ways -of employing my time: but my power and my liberty must be the fame, whatever other folks think of me, or though there should be a hundred different opinions or degrees of knowledge about me. If I am under engagement to go with another whither he wants me, and fomebody afks which way I am bound, I may fay, 'tis poffible to the Exchange, or 'tis possible to St. James's, but this leaves me no more at liberty than if it were abfolutely impossible that one of them fliould not be the place. Or if I want

to

4

40,0

I3

fpeak with a perfon whom I know not readily where he is, but am fo fure of finding him, that I fay it is impoffible but I must fee him; this does not abridge or any ways alter the liberty I should have to purfue or forbear my enquiries, were it poffible my endeavours might prove ineffectual.

It avails nothing to tell us, that our knowledge at beft can amount only to the highest probability of conjecture; for our bufinefs now lies with the propriety of language, and natural import of those expreffions, wherein we use the words Poffible or Impoffible : whatever refined notions we may have in our clofets, we leave them behind, and take up common conceptions when we go abroad upon our common transactions; be our clearest knowledge ever fo conjectural, we efteem it certain upon these occasions: which of us in setting out upon a visit, a diversion, or an affair of bufinefs, apprehends a poffibility of not arriving at the place of his deftination, yet at the fame time does not apprehend himfelf K_2 at

at liberty to alter his courfe in any part of his progrefs? but if the impoflibility of an event failing, implied neceffity in the agent, the idea of fuch impoflibility, however erroneous, yet while entertained, muft banifh the idea of freedom; but whether it does fo, I appeal to the judgement and hourly experience of all mankind. And if our Antagonifts have found a new fenfe in the word Impoflible, unknown to the reft of the world, they will do well to explain their idea in a manner enabling us to underftand their peculiar meaning.

To confider the other words of the like import, we fay it may rain, or be fair tomorrow; and when we fay this, we think nothing of any choice in the clouds, or the air to produce either weather, as the word naturally implies; for what we may do lies in our option to do, or to forbear. And it is one thing, when fpeaking of a prifoner for debt, for whom we have juft procured a releafe, we fay, Now he may go home to his family; and quite another, when fpeaking of a perfon gone out upon a tour

a tour of diversion, we fay, He may come home to-day: in one cafe, May expresses the liberty he has to do as he likes; in the other, it denotes only the chance there is in what manner he will use his liberty; for though I should know the released debtor will not go home, still I shall think he may if he will; but if I know the traveller's intention to stay out longer, I shall not think it possible he may come home to-day.

Nor should we foruple to use the word Can upon this occasion; for if we judge it not possible that he may come, it is the fame thing as believing it certain he cannot come, yet without idea of any imbecillity or reftraint to prevent him.

So likewife Muft and Neceffary, confidered by themfelves, imply a force compelling to one particular action, or an unfurmountable bar againft all others: if I muft attend upon a tryal, I am not at liberty to ftay away; if my health renders exercife neceffary, I muft go abroad fome how or other, and in that cafe am neceffitated

to

133.

134

to walk when debarred the use of all conveyances. But suppose a friend has some business with me, which requires no fort of haste, but I know he loves to take the first convenient opportunity for dispatching whatever he has to do: upon being asked when I expect to Tee him, I may say, perhaps not to-day, nor to-morrow, nor all this week; but I think he must necessarily come before the month is out.

Nor do we fcruple applying the fame terms to things inanimate, which though really neceffary agents, we generally conceive and speak of as having powers and liberty. Water compressed in a fire engine must necessarily rush through the spout, being forced to mount upwards against its nature, and becaufe it can find no other vent. But if a careless fervant does not mind to thrust the fpigot fast into the barrel, the beer must neceffarily run all away : in using this expreffion, we think nothing of the force of gravitation impelling bodies downwards, but only the certainty of the mifchief enfuing which we apprehend, for that the liquor

liquor being left to its liberty will follow the natural propenfity it has to defcend, and will exert a power to drive away the loofe fpigot obstructing its paffage.

§. 31. Any body with a little attention, may recollect a thousand inftances wherein the impoffibility of an event not coming to pafs, implies no more than a denial of all hazard that it may not come to pafs, which is neither an affirmation nor denial of power or freedom in the caufes bringing it forth to produce the contrary. Therefore in cafes where we need not, or lie under no neceffity of doing a thing, where we can, and may, and it is eafily poffible for us to act differently, yet we may be fo fure of our measures as that they must necessarily take effect, that they cannot, there is an impoffibility they should fail of fucceeding. or we fhould omit to employ them ; which latter impoffibility is a foundation ftrong enough to fupport the highest degree of Foreknowledge, and confequently Foreknowledge may well be abfolute without K 4 putting

13.5

putting a force upon us; or cramping us the leaft in our liberty.

Thus have I endeavoured to refcue mankind from flavery, from the dread of force, reftraint and controul hanging continually over them, not like *Epicurus* by pulling Providence from her throne, and fetting up the Anarchy of Chance in her ftead : but by fhowing the confiftency of her government with the free use of those powers allotted us, and proving human liberty one of the ministers to execute her purposes.

If the foregoing Obfervations upon this dark and intricate Subject fhall render it intelligible to others, and fhall have the fame weight upom them as they feem to me to deferve : then in those feasons wherein, as I may fay, God gives them a holiday to follow their own inclinations, they will move brifkly and cheerfully, without thought of any other restraint than, what I hope they will never wish to throw aside, Innocence and Propriety; and when he calls them to his fervices, if they do but manage to bring their minds into a proper dispo-

difpolition, they will find the performance of them a flate of perfect Freedom.

§. 32. Neverthelefs we have not done Demerit. with our Disputants yet, for if we can defend our Liberty against infringement by univerfal Providence and abfolute Foreknowledge, they change their attack upon another quarter, namely, the justice of Reward and Punishment in the fituation of mankind we have reprefented : for, fay they, if the Will of God be fulfilled on earth as well as in heaven, who hath ever refifted his Will ? why then doth he punish ? As to Reward, they find no fault with that being conferred upon them unmerited, fo the only difficulty remains with respect to punishment; and in order to answer their question, let us examine what is the proper and natural foundation of Punishment.

Men are apt enough to inflict it for injuries received, with no other view than to wreak their refentment, and the Righteous, when having most compleatly mastered their

their paffions, still feel an abhorrence rife in their breasts against enormous crimes, although no ways affecting themselves, nor capable of hurting them. What then, is this Resentment and this Abhorrence innate? Suppose they were, yet we cannot afcribe our passions and aversions to the Almighty, or imagine him punishing in order to remove a loathsome object from his fight which it gives him pain to behold. But Mr. Locke has long fince exploded the doctrine of innate Ideas, and if the idea of Injury was acquired, those of Resentment and Abhorrence, being its offspring, must be younger.

In our chapter on the Paffions we have traced Anger to its origin, and found it derived from Expedience; for children having often relieved themfelves from what-

^a He fays, we pass through four stages at least in our progress to the passion of anger: the experience of damage brought upon us by others; of our power to give them difpleasure; of the effect of such displeasure, to make them alter their measures, and of the oppofition we must expect to meet with against the exertion of

ever opprefied them by a violent exertion of their power against the cause of it, contract a habit of violence, and practise it afterwards without view to the consequences, fatisfaction being translated ^b from the end to the means.

The

of this power. Which last gives anger its violence, because a strenuous exertion is necessary to surmount that opposition. But after having compleated our progress, we lose fight of the strenge leading to it, and then the defire of revenge rises habitually upon fight of injury, without any further thought.

^b There is a chapter upon Tranflation; which is the principal channel whereby our motives are derived from one another. For the fatisfaction apprehended in attaining a purpofe, is what makes it a motive of action with us. Now when there are means necefiary to be purfued in order to accomplifh this point, our defire of the end cafts a fatisfaction likewife upon the means : fo long as we retain the end in view, that is properly our motive, and we defire the means only for the fake of what they will conduct us to : but it very frequently happens, that the fame means bring us fo often to our defired end, that the fatisfaction thrown from it, refts at last upon them, and we continue our fondness for them after the end is dropped out of our thought. Then it is the translation is perfectly made; and the means become an end, or motive, capable of influencing us to action.

This matter is illustrated by the inftance of money, which every body allows would have no regard, unless for

140

The abhorrence of villainy, as well when proposed to ourselves, as practified by others, is one of the moral fenses, which we have shown in the proper place, issue from the same fountain: they may indeed be conveyed to particular persons by education, by precept, by example, and sympathy,

for fake of the conveniences and pleafures of life it procures us. Yet we find it fo conftantly tending to this end, that there are few of us who would not take fome pains, and feel fatisfaction in getting a fum, without thinking of the pretty things we could do with it : and in fome the fatisfaction is fo ftrongly translated, that they will deny themfelves those very conveniences which rendered it defirable, for the fake of faving their money.

And as fatisfaction is tranflated from end to means, fo is affent, or judgement, from the premifes to the conclusion refulting therefrom, which being once well fettled in the mind, we continue to look upon as a certain truth, after having utterly forgotten the evidence by which we were brought to acknowledge it for fuch.

Thus it is by translation we receive all our flores of knowledge, except what is thrown in immediately from the fenfes : and by the fame channel we derive all our motives and defires, except those excited by fenfation.

• Mr. Search will not allow them to be given immediately by nature, but either catched by fympathy from others, or formed by translation; which latter is of two

forts,

forts, as we have feen in the preceeding note. For education, precept, and example, operate by information of the judgement concerning the rectitude of the things taught, or feen practifed; but fometimes he fuppofes them acquired by fatisfaction translated from those defirable ends to which they have been obferved to conduce. And he thinks his opinion confirmed by the great difference of moral fenfes among mankind : one man places his point of honour in revenging an affront; another in making his payments punctually, another in fuffering no wafte of his time, another in having nothing to do: one efteems perfecution meritorious; another looks upon it with horror and deteftation; nor perhaps are there any two men, who fee the fame things, with equal degree of approbation or abhorrence. But if these fenses were natural, not acquired, why fhould they not reprefent their objects in the fame colours to every body ? For all men fee whitenefs in lilies, rednefs in rofes, and verdure in the grafs. Nor let it be faid that bad company, or vicious courfes, may debilitate or corrupt the fenfes nature gave us; for the company a man keeps, or vices he practifes, will not make him blind or deaf, nor see different colours, or hear different founds from other people. Or if intemperance does fometimes weaken and vitiate the bodily fenfes, it does fo with respect to all objects alike: a jaundiced eye fees every thing yellow, nor does it add a particular brightnefs to fome colours above the reft: but the moral fense often difcerns the lustre of some virtues remarkably well, and fees none at all, or perhaps a darknefs in others equally refplendent. Neither is it an objection that fome objects appear generally amiable or detestable; that we have moral fenfes of things without any pains or care taken to acquire them ; that they

they judge inflantaneoufly without our knowing why j and firike their notices upon us forcibly againft our utmost endeavours to fliffe them. For by this rule our knowledge of language may be counted natural; because men in general have fome language; we learn our mother tongue without care or pains; the meaning of what we hear firikes us inflantaneously with the found, though we know not why the words table or chair, were affixed to the things they fignify; nor can we, with our utmost endeavours, diffociate fcandal, or unwelcome truths from the expressions conveying them.

Nor yet does he think their being derived from expedience any ways depreciates their value : for when our moral fenfes give their notices flrong, it is an evidence, which ought not to be difregarded, that we ourfelves formerly, or other perfons before us, have found an expedience in the practices they recommend, though we may not at prefent difcern it. Therefore they deferve the fame refpect as a man, in whofe judgement we can fully confide, who fhould give his advites, without laying before us the grounds whereon he founded them.

Thus if any body thall take offence at the supposition of there being no immediate natural connection between transgreffion and punishment, let it be made known to him that this does not invalidate the rules, nor influence of juffice: for the chain is often too long for us to bear in mind, which juffifies us in bringing the two ends to a contiguity they had not in nature. Many evil imaginations of the heart are harmles, unless as they give the mind an evil turn, productive of bad actions: many fingle deviations from rule may be innocent, otherwise than as they lead into pernicious habits: and in fome inflances an act of injuffice

pathy 4, but whoever acquired them first, learned them by observation of their neceffary

injustice might be expedient, were it not for fetting a bad example, or opening a door to licentiousness in ourfelves, by throwing us off our guard upon other occafions. Nor is it uncommon for men, after fome years experience over their heads, to difcern a fatal tendency in irregularities, it would have been impoffible to have convinced them of in their youth. So that if we were never to proceed against offences without asking, why, what harm do they do ? we might not always be ready with an anfwer: and vice must go unpunished, our own failings stand uncorrected, and the mifchiefs remotely confequent thereupon must be incurred. Wherefore it is right, becaufe neceffary, to make the translation of odium to wickedness compleat, without which the connection could not be preferved : and a prudent man will teach others, and enure himfelf, to feel an abhorrence of it upon no further view, than its blacknefs. Thus the affociation between Demerit and Depravity derives from prudence, not from nature : men being led into into it by the expedience there is in affociating them closely together without the intervention of expedience.

And in like manner he has laid down upon a former occasion, that things deferve honour, not merely because they are useful, but because it will be useful to place honour upon them.

^d The fubject of a feparate chapter. By this term, he underftands that aptnefs we all have, more or lefs, of taking the fentiments, the ideas, the affections, of the company we confort with, and in general caffing our imagination into the fame train with theirs: without

ceffary tendency to good order and happinefs, and by experience of the mifchiefs refulting from those practifes they would restrain. The frequent view of these good effects casts a value upon the fentiments producing them, and the translation being once compleatly made, defire fixes upon them as upon its ultimate object.

We find judgement does the fame with refpect to truth translated from the Postulatá to the Problem demonstrated : the equality between the squares of the two fides and hypothenuse in a rectangular triangle serves, for a basis in mathematical and mechanical operations without our running back per-

out which converfation would grow languid, the pleafures of fociety lofe their relifh, and our inclination to good offices its vigour. This is another main fpring of our motives, and even of our judgements; and performs its work much quicker than tranflation: for we do not prefently drop our ends out of view, but we often imbibe defires and opinions from others in an inftant.

The dexterous management of this engine makes a great part of the Poet's and Orator's arts, for upon it depends the efficacy of exclamation, politivenels, and ridicule, and of *Horace*'s rule, if you would have me weep, you muft first be grieved yourfelf.

petually

petually through the whole process whereby *Euclid* convinced us of its being a truth. In like manner when our moral fenses are grown vigorous, we follow their impulse without thinking of any higher principle first recommending them, and many of us without acknowledging any such principle.

Now I would not by any means leffen their influence, I rather with it were ftronger than it is; for we very feldom stand in a fituation to difcern the expedience of our actions, nor where it lies any thing remote have we ftrength of mind enough to purfue it; but these moral senses ferve as excellent guides to direct, and fpurs to ftimulate us towards the attainment of a happinefs that would otherwife efcape us. Neverthelefs it must be owned they partake of the nature' of paffion, having the like qualities, the like vehemence and manner of operation, and may be stiled virtuous appetites, as being the produce of reafon and industry rather than of nature. They are to be ranked among the Scyons which Plato told us Urania grafted upon the wild L

1.

wild stocks in *Pfyche*'s garden •, and which his master afterwards put us in mind were apt to run luxuriant, unless kept within bounds by a proper tendance.

Therefore it is one thing to confult our rules of action for fhaping our conduct thereby, and another to examine the rules themfelves for determining in what manner we fhall eftablifh, or rectify them. For as military difcipline confifts in the flrict fubordination of the foldiers to the officers,

• In his allegorical defcription of earthly and heavenly love, under the names of *Thalaffian* and *Uranian* Venus, related in the Vifion. He reprefents *Pfyche* receiving her first notices from external objects and appetites, as she lay helplefs in the garden of Nature. The gardener, *Selfifb*, planted certain wild stocks producing crabbed fruits, until *Thalaffio* grafted the accomplishments, and *Urania* the virtues upon them. The latter accompanied *Pfyche* through the journey of life, and then setting her aftride upon the golden anchor of *Elpis*, wasted her up into the bleffed abodes.

Plato afterwards recounted fome converfations he had formerly with a certain native of *Tarfus* in *Cilicia*, the fubftance of which he imparted to our Author; dreffing them up after the philofophical manner. But unluckily our Author cannot recollect any thing at prefent; though he hopes to do it in convenient time, having fome confused traces of them still in his memory.

and

and the officers to the general, fo the little ftate of man is never fo well disciplined as when the moral fenfes have the entire command of our motions, but lie themfelves under controul of fober confideration and found judgement. While in the hurry of action we have not leifure to confult the general, but must push bravely on whither our immediate officers lead us; nor indeed is confultation the bufiness then, but intrepidity, vigour and alertnefs, Therefore the virtuous man acts because it is right and juft, becoming and laudable, and forbears what appears wrong and bafe, unworthy and shocking to his thought : he follows the motions of zeal, honour, shame, decency, natural affection, civility, as he feels them rife in his breaft; or if doubts arife he tries the moral fenfes by one another, and adheres to that which carries the frongest lustre, and highest excellency in his imagination, without confidering further why he fuffers himfelf to be guided by their influence, or whence it was derived. For the greateft part of mankind know not a L 2 why

why nor a whence, but take up their principles partly from their parents and tutors, partly from cuftom and general effimation; and those who do investigate them to the fountain, cannot carry their investigations in their head upon common occasions.

But in feafons of deliberation, when admitted into the general's tent, having the instructions and intelligences laid before us, and fitting in council upon the operations of the campaign, it would be abfurd to take an officer's own testimonial of his merit, or give him his orders becaufe they are fuch as he is most fond of executing; we are only to regard the public fervice, what are each man's abilities, and how he may beft conduct himfelf to promote it. So if we have fufficient lights and opportunity to take our moral fenses under examination, in order to moderate what extravagancies they may have run into, or determine the rank among them in the command of our powers, it would be no lefs prepofterous to try their rectitude by what themfelves fuggeft to be right, or to fettle their degrees of authority upon

upon any other foundation than their feveral tendencies towards the general happines, wherein we shall always find our own contained.

§. 33. Now in matters of punifhment, when we have it in our power, let us regard the heinoufnefs of the offence, together with all circumftances that may aggravate or abate our abhorrence of it as beheld by our moral fenfe: but when we are to examine the foundation we have for entertaining this abhorrence, we fhall find no other than the expedience ^a and neceffity of pu-

a Were the connection between offence and punifhment natural and neceffary, there would be no room for mercy; for what nature has joined infeparably, the will of man ought not to put afunder, and what is odious in itfelf no circumstances can make innocent. But our rules of juffice being imperfect, calculated for general use, and impossible to be adapted to every particular cafe, the exceptions whereto they are liable open the door to mercy : Which is not to be exercifed arbitrarily, but guided by rules; fuch as the first offence, or the party being drawn in by furprize, or in hurry of paffion, or upon repentance, which takes away the neceffity of punifhment, by answering the fame purpose in preventing of future crimes. But mercy is as blamable as injuffice, when extended without rule or reason, or perhaps unless when the rigour of the law, according to the vulgar faying, would be an injury.

149

L 3

nifhment to preferve order, and good faith, and honefty among mankind. Even thofe who take private revenge, when called upon to juftify their conduct, always plead that otherwife they fhould lie open to perpetual infults; which fhews that the only reafonable excufe for refentment is not ftrictly the injury received, but the prevention of injuries for the future. Therefore reafon, as well as authority, enjoins us to forgive our brother not only feven times, but until feventy times feven, unlefs where animadverfion is neceffary either for our own quiet and benefit, or that of others.

And there is a fpecies of punifhment called chaftifement, which has no other object befide the benefit of the party upon whom it is exercifed. Parents and fchoolmafters may not be difpleafed at unlucky tricks played by their lads, as fhewing a fagacity and fprightlinefs they delight to behold, yet they will not fuffer them to pafs with impunity, leaft it fhould generate idlenefs and other mifchiefs: here is no abhorrence ftriking the moral fenfe, nor are the

boys

ISI

boys difliked the worfe for their fallies of youth and ingenuity ill applied; fo the chaftifement is not for mifcarriages committed, but for future enormities which might be committed.

'Tis true the judge paffes fentence upon criminals by stated rules, because he is no more than a minister to speak the sense of the law: but the legislature, in establishing the law, regards no other rules than those respecting the public utility; therefore equal punishments are appointed for offences of unequal enormity; for the law hangs for ftealing the value of five shillings, but does no more for murder; and fome go wholly unpunished, such as ingratitude, intemperance, entailing difeases or poverty upon families by gallantries or extravagance, becaufe they cannot be enquired into without caufing confusion and worfe inconveniencies. On the other hand, when the title to a throne is fo difputable that many honeft, well-difpofed perfons are drawn by mere error of judgment to take part on the unfortunate fide; they are adjudged and executed as rebels, because it is necessary to main-L4

maintain the authority of government, and tranquillity of the flate.

§. 34. Should it be objected, that this proves the contrary to what we have laid down, because the law, whose basis is utility, does not govern us in our estimation of Demerit, for we compassionate instead of detefting the deluded malecontent, while we acknowledge the expedience and neceffity of the law which condemns him, and think the abandoned debauchée deferving of punishment which the law cannot provide for him; therefore we build our judgement upon other grounds than those of utility. I shall answer, that as the law is not the fole measure of justice, fo neither is it the fole fountain of utility : for be the polity of a nation ever fo well regulated, or ever fo wifely administered, the people must still do fomething for themfelves in order to compleat their happinefs, and Providence has referved to his own management the putting a check upon fome enormities which the law cannot reach, nor human fagacity difcover or prevent,' There-

Therefore that utility which the provisions of the law cannot totally compass, may still remain for the foundation of private animadversion and censure: nor is it a simall argument of its being so, that we naturally look upon the greatness of mischief done as an aggravation of guilt in the perpetrator. If an unwholessive potion be given to make a man sick for a week, it is an injury; if it bring on an incurable difease, it is a more heinous offence; if death ensue, it is the crying fin of murder.

Well, but you fay the mifchief muft be defigned, or there will be no crime at all: the greater degree of mifchief is only an evidence of deeper blacknefs in the defign; fo that properly fpeaking, it is not the damage done, but depravity of heart in the doer, which raifes your abhorrence and wifnes for vengeance; for when affured of the defign, you pronounce the guilt the fame, feel the fame abhorrence and wifh, although its purpofe be utterly fruftrated, and no damage at all enfue.

Why

Why this is the very thing I have been contending for all along, that the true ground of punifhment is not the mifchief done, or the crime committed, but the prevention of future enormities, productive of future mifchiefs, and this object I think may fairly rank under the clafs of utility.

We have found in the former part of this work, that the volitions giving birth to our actions depend upon the prefent motives occuring to our thought, which are either what our judgement reprefents as most expedient, or our imagination as most alluring and defireable; and these motives are fuggested by the opinions, the fentiments, the inclinations and habits we have contracted: when defire fixes upon practices of pernicious tendency, this is called a Depravity of Mind, or vulgarly, though improperly, a Depravity of Will, by a metonyme^a of cause for effect, because the fate

^a Figures, though very convenient for common ule, to give a lively tint to our ideas, and gain them an eafy reception with those to whom we address ourfelves, yet are dangerous things to the speculative, who

ftate of the mind, and defires in the heart, influence the will, and of course produce actions conformable thereto; for a good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can an evil tree bring forth good fruit.

Therefore this depravity of heart being productive of bad effects, whenever the feafon and opportunity ferves to bring them to maturity, becomes juftly odious upon account of the poifonous fruits it bears. But as punifhment, animadverfion and cenfure, being grievous to the party fuffering them, tends to diffociate defire from the fentiments whereto they are annexed, and work amendment, or in other words, to give men a difguft for the vices rendering them obnoxious thereto; or at leaft to re-

who perplex themfelves grievoufly by underftanding figurative expreffions literally. We have fufficiently feen the mifchiefs of them in the difficulties upon Freewill, Election, and coexistent Powers, occasioned by taking the causes of volition, for volition itself. Those who use the common magnifying glass ordinarily puzzle themfelves about the figure, without ever touching the thing fignified, and make work enough for the genuine Microscope to rectify the blunders they commit.

Arain

156

ftrain them from breaking forth into act, and difcourage others from entertaining the like; it is this ufe which renders the punifhment merited and juft: for I appeal to any confiderate perfon, whether he would punifh, or afcribe to a depravity of heart any action, or fentiment whatever, which could never do the leaft hurt either to the owner, or any perfon in the world befide.

§. 35. For this reafon freedom of action, and fo much underftanding as may make the party fenfible for what the punifhment was inflicted, are always efteemed neceffary requifites to render him obnoxious thereto; becaufe punifhment operating upon the Imagination, and through that upon the Will, where either of thefe two channels are wanting, becomes ufelefs, and confequently unjuft. Therefore fly Revenges which may be miftaken for accidents, and nobody can know they were the effect of refentment, though fometimes practifed by fpiteful perfons, have never been held warrantable by the judicious: nor will a righte-

ous

ous man punish where the transgreffor had not liberty of choice, nor where the reason of his punishing cannot be understood.

If a brick tumbles down upon you, it would be ridiculous to fall a whipping, or breaking it, bécause fuch discipline could contribute nothing towards preventing other bricks afterwards from tumbling upon your own, or fomebody elfe's head; but had our treatment with brickbats any influence upon their future motions, we should form rules of justice for our dealings with them as well as with one another. When the puppy dog fouls your parlour you beat him for it; but then you rub his nofe in the filth to make him fenfible why he is beaten: and you think this feverity justifiable, without difcerning any depravity of heart in the beast, only because it secures your rooms against the like difaster for the future : but if he has stolen a woodcock from the larder, and you do not difcover the theft till next morning, when your correction can do no good, it would be cruelty to chastife him.

Mischiefs

Mischiefs done by mere accident are judged pardonable: but why? because punishment has no influence upon accidents: for in some cases, where better care may prevent them, we do not scruple to animadvert in order to spur men to greater vigilance: the statute of Ann lays a heavy penalty upon servants setting a house on fire undesignedly; nor did I ever hear that statute complained of as contrary to natural justice.

Why are military punifhments feverer than all others? Is there greater depravity in difobedience to an officer, than to a civil magiftrate, a parent, or a mafter? Not fo, but becaufe the fervice requires a ftricter difcipline, and more implicit obedience. Nor can you pretend the foldiers confent upon enlifting, for many of them are inveigled to enlift by drink, or by the bountymoney, without knowing what they undertake, or confidering the rules they fubmit to: befides that you fubject the imprefied. man to the fame feverities with the volunteer.

Why

159

Why is the law of fashion fo strict upon little matters, that a man would make himfelf more ignominious by wearing his wig the wrong fide outwards, than by correfponding with the Pope, or the Pretender? unless because censure, exclamation and ridicule, being the only penalties you have to enforce it, you must lay them on the more lustily to keep the thoughtless world to decency in matters wherein they have no other restraint upon them.

Thus whatever species of punishment we fix our eye upon, we shall always find it deducible from utility; but the deduction is too long to carry constantly in our heads, nor can every head trace it out; neither do we upon all occasions stand in a situation to difcern the consequences of our punishing, or sparing: therefore the judicious, from their observation of those causes, so far as they can investigate them, strike out rules of justice, and distinguish degrees of wickedness, which they hang up in public as marks, or erect as posts of direction to guide our steps in the journey of life, and inculcate

inculcate a moral fenfe, or abhorrence of evil, to ferve as a guard to protect us againft inordinate defires that might tempt us to injuffice, and as a meafure to apportion our refentment againft the heinoufnefs of an offence, or depravity of an offender.

Such of us as are well difciplined look up to thefe marks continually, and fhape their fteps accordingly, both with refpect to what they fhall avoid themfelves, and what notice they fhall take of the proceedings and fentiments of their fellowtravellers, without thinking of any thing further; and much the greater part of us without knowing of any thing further to be thought of: when thefe latter get a fmattering of philofophy, you hear them declaim inceffantly upon the effential and unalterable rules ^a of right and wrong, independent

^a It is difficult to conceive a rule not relating to the action of fome Beings existent: for a rule respecting nonentities can fcarce deferve the name of one. Therefore Rules can be no older than the Beings they relate to, nor have existence before these were created. Neither can they be independent on God, because depending upon the condition, wherein he placed his creatures.

161

dependent on God himfelf, having a nature he did not give them; and being an obligation upon him that he must not break through.

§. 36. But the all-feeing eye of God ftretches wide and far, beholds all nature and all futurity in one unbounded profpect, therefore needs no marks nor rules * to direct his measures, nor moral senses to protect

creatures. For if men had no property, there could be no fuch rule as, Thou shalt not steal; neither could there be a rule, Thou shalt not bear falfe witness, if men had not the use of speech. Our Author has confidered this matter more at large in his chapter on Rectitude, where he has endeavoured to fettle the proper import of effential and intrinsic, when applied thereto, and flow how those words have been abused, by extending them to a latitude never thought of by fuch as first employed them.

^a Nor virtues, nor paffions, nor affections. Therefore when we fay he is just or merciful, jealous.or compaffionate, angry or grieved, or repentant; thefe are only fo many forms whereinto we are forced to caft his wifdom, in order to bring it fuitable to our conception. For when he purfues the like meafures as we are prompted to by those affections, he does it upon a difcernment, of their propriety to effect his purpofes. Which motive fometimes carries him in contrariety to M thefe

Demerit. -

against temptations which cannot approach him : for in every application of fecond causes, he bears his ultimate end constantly in view, and pursues it unerringly and invariably. What this end may be, perhaps it were in vain for us to enquire, but the utmost point beyond which we can conceive nothing further, is the good and happiness of his creatures : this then we must regard as the centre wherein all his dispensations terminate, and by the tendency whereto he regulates his measures of justice.

Now Punishment must be acknowledged an evil to the fufferer while under the lash of it, therefore unless we will suppose the fountain of Goodness fometimes to terminate his views upon evil, we must allow that he never punishes, unless for some greater benefit to redound thereform, either to the offender, or some other part of the

these affections: for he fuffers the wicked to pass with impunity, when he has any good to bring out of their evil, and the righteous to lie under diffress, when tending to work out a greater weight of glory forthem.

creation.

163

creation. What other benefits may arife therefrom we know not, but we know its tendency to check or cure a depravity of heart where it is, to difcourage the contracting of it where it is not, and confequently to prevent the mifchievous fruits growing from that evil root.

Therefore as men are constituted, this remedy is neceffary to restrain enormities from abounding among them, unlefs you will fuppose a miraculous interposition, which is not the ufual method of providence; and it is this neceffity which justifies the punishment, and afcertains the measure of it. If we go on to enquire further, why men are fo conftituted, this will involve us in another queftion, which never was, and perhaps never will be determined by the fons of Adam, namely, why pain, distress, affliction, and uneafiness of all kinds, were permitted at all in the world; for moral evil were no evil if there were no natural; because, how could I do wrong, if no hurt or damage could enfue therefrom to any body, and is no greater than the M 2 mif-

mifchiefs whereof it may be productive? Therefore it is natural evil which creates the difficulty, and the quantity of this evil is the fame from whatever caufes arifing. "Think ye those eighteen upon whom the "tower in *Siloam* fell were finners above all "other *Galileans*?" We are told, nay: yet the pain, the loss of life, and other damages they fustained, were the fame in quantity as if they had brought down the ruin upon their own heads by their mifconduct.

Let any man explain to me clearly how the permiffion of mifchievous accidents is confiftent with our ideas of infinite goodnels, and I will undertake to fhow him by the lights he shall afford me, how the permiffion of moral evil is likewife confistent. The only folution of this difficulty I apprehend must be taken from the imperfection ^b of our understanding, for we have

^b Our Author in his chapter on Goodnefs, fuppofes fome other Attribute, unknown to the fons of *Adam*, to fet the bounds to infinite Goodnefs, that it may not be coextensive with Omnipotence. And in a difcourfe he had with an angel in the vision, on his re-

turn

observed in a former place, that infinite Goodness and infinite Power confidered in the abstract, seem incompatible : which shows there is something wrong in our conceptions, and that we are not competent judges of what belongs, and what is repugnant to goodness. But God knows though we do not, and is good and righteous

turn back from the mundane foul into the vehicular ftate, he is fhown that there must be other attributes befides those whereof we have any conception, because these would not suffice for the business of the Creation.

Dacier would have faid, he took this hint from Mofes being admitted to fee the back parts of God, but not his whole perfon. But Search affures me, he thought nothing of Mofes while he was with the angel. He had indeed before taken notice of the expression, that no man can fee God and live; which he expounded, not that the fight would be fo terrible as to destroy us, but that man, while imprisoned in this mortal body, has not faculties to differ the divine Nature, and fo cannot fee God while he lives under this veil of flefh.

^c Becaufe our idea of infinite Goodne's feems to require, that it fhould exhauft Omnipotence, and our idea of the latter, that it fhould be inexhauftible. Since then we find fomething wrong in our conceptions, how can it be expected we fhould explain an object we have not faculties to comprehend? Therefore our want of understanding is no proof against its reality.

M 3

in all his ways; therefore whatever method he purfues is an evidence of its rectitude beyond all other evidences that can offer to us for the contrary.

§. 37. Justice regards folely the degree of depravity existent, nor has any concern with the manner how it came to exist : a man bribed with a large fum of money is not excufed by the guilt of the employer, ' although perhaps he would never have thought of committing the crime without, that temptation; and if evil communication corrupts good manners, the corruption coming through this channel does not exempt, it from cenfure. The perpetration indeed of villainies, without any inftigation or inducement, aggravates their heinousness, because it indicates a greater depravity of heart; but the degree of depravity once afcertained, always fets the measure to the detestation and demerit of the offender, without enquiring into the fource from whence it was derived; and WC

we fhall find it fo in whatever cafe we confider maturely and candidly.

Suppose you and I delegated by heaven to govern fome little diftrict, with abfolute power of life and death over the inhabitants, with perfect knowledge of the fecrets of . their hearts, and were fitting in council together upon the measures of executing our commission, which we were refolved to do with exact justice and integrity. Suppofe further, what has been fhown not to be the real fact, but in order to make our cafe the ftronger for our prefent purpole, let us suppose that men had been hitherto utterly deftitute of Freewill, but guided in all their motions by an external influence; and their fentiments and dispositions thrown upon them, without their own act, by the impulse of necessary causes; but at the moment when we entered upon our office, this influence and impulse were taken off, and they were put into the condition of common men, whom we have converfed with in the world : how should we proceed to manage with them.

M 4

In

In the first place it may be prefumed we should agree upon a general amnesty for the paft, in confideration of the force they had lain under; and in the next, we should contrive measures for their future well-being, and finding them in poffeffion of powers of action, together with liberty. to use them, we should study to turn their Freewill into courses most advantageous to the community. If we faw vices and malignancy among them, we might probably feel an abhorrence and deteftation thereof, for I do not suppose ourselves divested, of the moral fenfes we had acquired before, but this fentiment would be like that averfion we have to fpiders, toads and adders, who did not make themfelves what they are, but received their venom and uglinefs from the hand of nature; yet I hope we should be too equitable to punish any man merely because we did not like his looks, unlefs where those looks manifested a badnefs of heart, productive of mifchief to himfelf or his neighbours, and then we should apply fuch punishments, notes of

infamy,

infamy, or cenfures, as we judged most proper for preventing his ill qualities from breaking forth into act, or fpreading the contagion elfewhere, thinking our proceedings justifiable by their expedience, and regulating the measure of our punishments by their feveral aptness to answer the purpose intended.

§. 38. If then we find that human reafon, when acting most conformably to our ideas of prudence and equity, would restrain depravity, from whatever sources arising, by adequate punishments, why should we arraign the justice of God for proceeding in the like manner? For he beholds the works of his hands, and discerns whereof they are made, nor is he unacquainted with the operations and uses of second causes: He has made moral evil the general, and, as fome believe, the fole "fountain of natu-

ral

^a It is a very orthodox tenet, that pain and mifery were brought into the world, as well among the brute as the rational creation, by the fall of *Adam*. And the ancient Mythologists give us a description of their golden

170

ral: He has given man freedom to choose between good and evil: He knows that vices

golden age, fimilar to that of paradife, exempt from. both evils. Yet though they have made the moral coeval with the natural, they feem not to have fupposed them effects of one another; but both co-effects of the fame caufe, to wit, the gradual decay of nature in her three changes, from the golden age to the filver,from filver to brafs, and from thence to iron. The Philosophers appear to have held natural evil the confequence of moral; which opinion we may suppose they founded upon the divine Goodners, from whence nothing evil could proceed, but the creatures brought! it upon themfelves by the perverfe use of their powers. But then they conceived this attribute must require, that the natural evil fhould refult from the moral of that particular creature upon whom it fell: for they, could not underftand it confiftent with goodness that any one should fuffer for the failings of another. This led them into the notion of a pre-existent state, wherein every man, by his misbehaviour, may have rendered, himfelf obnoxious to the misfortunes he undergoes in the prefent.

I need not remark the abfurd confequences that would follow from this doctrine fupported upon thefe grounds: which muft with equal reafon infer a preexiftence for the brute creation too, down to the pifmire, the maggot, the new-found polypus, and fearce-perceptible puceron he devours, together with a rationality therein, rendering them capable of moral good and evil. Becaufe though we can account for the diffreffes of men, the mained and diffempered births

vices will abound among them, which will influence them to use their freedom to pernicious

of children, from the derivation of original fin : yet that fin being never extended to the animals, will not account for the fufferings brought upon them by their tyrannical lord, imperial man, by their fellow fubjects, by weather, or accidents. I fay, I need not urge this objection, the doctrine of Pre-existence being now univerfally exploded. For every old woman knows, the foul of the child was created at the very inftant. when the mother first felt herself quick. And any body may fee with half an eye, that if we had all existed a hundred years ago, some or other of us must : have remembered it. Befides, if we would not beat a dog, unlefs for fome fault he may be fenfible of, who can imagine we should be punished ourfelves, without letting us know for what? But the most folid argument against Pre-existence arises from its uselessness : for what is past and gone we have nothing to do with, our concern lies only with the future, and it behoves us to shape our behaviour in such manner as may make our condition happy hereafter. If we could demonstrate our Pre-exiftence ever fo clearly, we could not expect to know what passed with us in that state, nor gather from thence a fund of experience whereon to build observations for regulating our future conduct. Therefore this fubject is not worth our taking into confideration at all; and without confidering, we can fee no proofs of its reality; and without proofs it would not become us to believe it; and what does not become us to believe, there can be no harm in running down with exclamation or ridicule. The like may be faid of the Pre

172

nicious purpofes, and has appointed punifhment as one of the fprings to operate upon Pre or Post-existence of animals, which if we could discover, would neither do us any fervice, nor enable us to do them any. And the fame method might be proper in other cases, by refusing to puzzle our thoughts with curious speculations, which if investigated to the utmost can do no good.

Nor would our author be displeased to have it practifed upon himfelf : for there are things useful to fome, which are not fo, but rather mifchievous to others; and he has been forced fometimes to enter upon fubjects that might fcandalize the fcrupulous, or hurt the unwary, to whom he hopes to give better content, when he can recover the matters before mentioned to 3 have been communicated by Plato from the Cilician: but this must be a work of time. In the mean while, he would be glad that every one would follow him in the difcuffion of fuch points as they find fuited to their tafte or liking, paffing lightly over the reft, as the . wanton rovings of a speculative fancy. For my friend Search, to do him justice, has an honest heart, and would willingly give offence to nobody, but difpenfe his wares about in quarters where they might at leaft > be harmles. But, as he has observed in a discourse upon this topic with his vehicular conductor, the antients, delivering their lectures by word of mouth, ... could adapt their fubjects to their audience, referving their efoteries for adepts, and dealing out exoteries only to the vulgar: whereas we modern's having no other channel of communication than the prefs, must throw out both forts to the mercy of every man that can raife the pence to buy a copy, or has a friend, of whom he can borrow one.

173

the human mind for reftraining the growth of wickedness, and preventing its bad effects. Can we then doubt that he will employ all the springs of action in those uses, and upon those occasions wherein he in his wisdom judges them respectively proper? or what rule of justice does he violate by so doing?

Why he permitted moral evil, is a confideration quite foreign to the prefent fubject, and can only produce that entanglement naturally confequent upon blending difcuffions of different natures together: for whether we can reconcile that permiffion with our ideas, or no, ftill evil being once permitted, becomes a foundation for juffice to ward off the bad effects that might enfue from it: for juffice cannot ftand at variance with goodnefs, nor can one ever forbid what the other recommends.

As the judge paffes fentence upon the houfe-breaker and the affaffin, not in animofity to them, but in regard to the honeft man, that he may fleep quietly in his bed, and go about his lawful occasions without hazard

hazard of his life: fo God punishes the wicked not in wrath and detestation, but in mercy and loving-kindness, many times to the delinquent himself, but always either to him or his fellow-creatures.

Therefore to the queftion, Who hath ever refifted his will? Why then doth he punifh? It may be anfwered, To fecure the further accomplifhment of his will, and to effect his gracious purpofes towards those whom he intended to preferve from the like wickedness, or the pernicious consequences fpringing therefrom: views wherein we cannot find the least tincture of injustice or arbitrary proceedings.

§. 39. But it is not enough to justify the ways of God, unlefs we endeavour likewife to obviate the perverse confequences men fometimes draw from the will of God being constantly fulfilled. For, fay they, if that will always take place, then we have no will of our own, being pinned down to one particular manner of proceeding, which it is his will should be taken.

But

175

But if human action were neceffary, as indeed it is not, we have feen that would not excufe iniquity from punifhment, as being an application of the proper caufe for preventing the growth and mifchiefs of it; and this perfuafion fufficiently inculcated, would neceffarily, if the operation of motives be neceffary, drive them into a courfe of thinking and acting productive of happinefs; and if they attain the poffeffion of this treafure, 'tis not much matter whether they apprehend themfelves procuring it by neceffary or voluntary agency: therefore they will

'Squire Search in this place probably had a view to the difpute that happened upon the road fome time ago between him and Doctor Hartley. The squire, it feems, in his chapter on the caufes of action, had affigned the mind herfelf for the efficient caufe of all we do: this the doctor would not allow; for he gave the following account of the matter. The human body, fays he, is a collection of little threads or fibres curioufly bound up together; among which the Ether infinuates throughout every part of our frame, difpofing itfelf into ftrings running crofs-wife between the fides of the interflices wherein it lies. When objects ftrike upon our senses, they agitate the fibres of the organ whereon they fall : which agitation puts the etherial ftrings contiguous to them into little tremours, called 3

176

¥

will do well to contemplate the penalties annexed to evil-doing; for it will do them good one way or other, if not as exhortation to work upon a free agent, at least as a falutary medicine to rectify the diforders in their machine.

called by him Vibratiuncles. As the ftrings communicate with one another all over our body, the forefaid vibratiuncles excite others correspondent to them in the strings lying about the nerves of our muscles, thereby agitating those nerves, which produce a contraction in the muscles, and cause them to move the limbs. The tremours in the first mentioned strings he ftiles fenfory vibratiuncles, and in the latter motory vibratiuncles. Thus the doctor acknowledges all hu- . man action neceffary, being performed by the mechanical running of vibratiuncles from the fenfory to the motory, without any intervention of the mind to affift in the operation. He allows indeed that the vibratiuncles, in their paffage, touch at the feat of the mind, where they leave information of the way they are going, and of the external objects exciting them. fo the mind, having continual notice of what is doing, fancies herfelf the author of all that is done; whereas in reality the fits an idle spectator only, not an agent of our actions; like the fly upon the chariot-wheel, afcribing to her own prowefs, the mighty clouds of dust she sees raised around her.

Now, my coufin Search not having fludied anatomy, thought himfelf no match at argument for the learned phyfician, fo declined entering the lifts with him, but

pro+

But an event being agreeable to the will of another, does not always hinder it from being the choice of our own will too: what I do by the command of a fuperior, while I pay him a chearful and ready obedience, is done by the will of both. 'Tis lucky, you

propofed a feigned iffue to be tried by the country, in imitation of those directed out of chancery, upon the following case. Mr. Jeffery Dolittle, a gentleman of tolerable capacity and good repute among his neighbours, departed this life in an unufual manner; for one morning after breakfast his perceptive or spiritual part was taken from him miraculoufly, without any difeafe, diforder, accident, or diflocation of any fingle particle either in the groffer or finer part of his material frame. The question is, how this defunct or mere machine would behave? Both parties agree, that the pulfe would continue to beat, the lungs to play, the animal fecretions to be carried on, the vibratiuncles to traverfe to and fro, as before, and that by dinner-time the tongue and palate might come into that flate which affects us with hunger; yet the perceptive mind being gone, there would be no uneafinefs for want of victuals, nor perception of the objects round about. But Search, in his declaration, avers, that it would not walk down flairs, fit down to table, carve the meats. converse with the company, nor give its opinion upon the conduct of the ministry, usefulness of the militia, or whether Nivernois comes in good earnest to conclude, or only to amufe us. The doctor in his plea infifts, that it would do all this, and every thing elfe N that

you fay, I ftand fo difpofed, for I muft have done the thing had I been ever fo defirous of the contrary: fo I am in the condition of a man fitting in a room where the doors are locked upon him without his perceiving it; he is actually a prifoner, though

that might be expected from a reafonable creature, and well-bred gentleman. And upon this point iffue was joined.

But it being difficult prefently to impanel a jury who would confent to be fhut up without victuals, drink, or candle, until they fhould agree upon a verdict, the litigants ftruck up a compromise in the mean time, that each fhould jog on his own way without interruption from the other. For, fays Search, I fuppofe, doctor, we both aim at doing fome good 'to mankind by our labours: now if we can effect our purpole, 'tis not a farthing matter by what process the operation goes on. Whether we can draw fuch fcratches upon paper, as that the rays reflected therefrom shall raife vibratiuncles in the reader, which shall inform him of falutary theorems, that will better the condition of his mind, and beget motory vibratiuncles that will put his limbs into a course of action most conducive to his benefit; or whether, by the ordinary methods of conviction, inftruction, and exhortation, we can fpur him on to use his own activity in a manner most beneficial to himself.

Purfuant to this compromife, we fee in the text before us, that our author, fo he can work a perfuafion productive of happinefs, does not care whether it operates by free or neceffary agency.

he does not feel his confinement, because he happens to choose the only thing in his power, that is, to stay where he is.

But what if I do a good office for an acquaintance to whom I owe no obligation, nor have other inducement than good nature? do not I gratify his will and my own at the fame time? Or what if an artful politician, who can fee through and through me, leads me dextroufly to co-operate with his defigns: although the iffue fhould fall out befide or contrary to my intention, still the steps I am made to take by his management were the work of my own will. So when God puts in use the proper caufes for producing an event, we need not fear but he will adapt them fo wifely as that they shall not fail to accomplish his will; neverthelefs, if among these causes there be the motives fit to work upon a free agent, the act performed is as compleatly the will of that agent, as if his ideas had derived from any other fource, or been thrown up by the fortuitous declination of Epicurus's atoms.

The fallacy here lies in the fame equivocation of language taken notice of in the foregoing pages, to which I refer any body who thinks it needful to revife what has been already offered : for the Will of God must be fulfilled in no other fense than what was absolutely foreknown, or contained in the plan of Providence; must come to pass, not by compulsion or necesfity, but by removal of all hazard to the contrary.

§. 40. Another fond imagination may flart up in men's heads from the neverfailing completion of the divine Will, as if it juftified them in all the follies they have been guilty of; for, fay they, whatever we have done muft have been agreeable to the Will of God, becaufe having taken effect; for nothing has fallen out that was not fo; therefore wherein have we done amifs? for who hath ever refifted his Will? And they put this queftion by way of defiance, to give any other than one certain anfwer.

But they deceive themfelves by their manner of wording the queftion; for had it been afked, who hath defeated his Will? we could not have produced an inftance, nor yet would it have ferved their purpofe, nor furnifhed an excufe for their mifconduct that we could not: but who hath refifted his Will? is no fuch unanfwerable queftion; for the Will may be refifted without fuccefs, and then come to pafs notwithftanding; or it may be mifunderftood, and in that cafe accomplifhed by the very endeavour to do fomething contrary to it.

Suppose you lend money to a friend upon his note; he being at a diffance, and fully confiding in your honour, fends you a letter with the value inclosed, only defiring you will burn the note, that your executors may not find it to charge him with the debt; but before you can fulfill his request, fomebody else finds the note, who having a spite against you, throws it into the fire with intention to disable you from recovering the sum contained in it; here he acts in direct opposition to your Will, his defign

v 1 31

181

is

is nothing elfe than to crofs and thwart you; yet in fo doing he does the very thing you will fhould be done, and would have done yourfelf, if he had not been beforehand with you. In like manner we may, and too frequently do, refift the Will of God, but by that very refiftance accomplifh it; for we act in the dark, fcarce ever knowing what is his real Will, or that, its conftant aim, the good of his creation, with the greateft part whereof we have no visible connection, nor the least fuspicion of what concern their interests have with our proceedings.

We have often heard of a diffinction between the fecret ^a, and declared Will, the

^a Great mifchiefs and much enthulialim have arifen in the world, from pretending to pry into the fecret Will. The very attempt is highly abfurd; for can we fancy ourfelves wifer than God, or cunning enough to find out what he purpofely conceals? Therefore we are conftantly to efteem that his Will, to which we are directed by the rules affigned us, or lights afforded us; nor can any thing elfe be counted fuch until verified by the event, and that will not juffify our having proceeded to accomplifh it. For though whatever has been permitted, was beft to be done, becaufe Providence

the latter is fo much as we can difcover by the beft use of our understanding, which being fallible, will sometimes discover to us what is not the truth; yet this is the guide God has given us for our direction, and while we act conformably thereto,

dence orders all things for the beft; yet is this no plea for the tranfgreffor: becaufe the merit of an action depends upon the ultimate point in view: whatever lies beyond, which could not be difcerned, has no fhare in the effimation.

Tully relates a ftory of one Jafon of Phereu, who had an impostume upon his stomach, that could not be cured by any means or affiftance he could procure. It became to troublefome to him, that he grew tired of life; but having not learned the ftoical doctrine of Suicide, he determined to dispose of his life for the benefit of his country ; fo he entered into the wars, and put himfelf foremoft in all dangerous enterprizes. In one of these he received a wound with a spear, which luckily opened the impoftumation, and worked a perfect cure. Now had this wound been given in private enmity instead of open war, every body would have condemned it as a crying enormity. For the intention whereon the view terminates, must denominate the deed : and though it was the Will of God to reftore health and eafe by this means to the fufferer, yet this object lying out of fight could have no effect to brighten the colour of the action. Nor could the Perpetrator be faid to do the Will of God, becaufe he acted in difobedience to his declared Will, contained in the command, Thou shalt do no murder.

although

although the event by difappointing our endeavours fhould prove the fecret Will to have been otherwife, neverthelefs our honeft, though miftaken zeal for his fervice, will ftand approved in his fight, and engage his bountiful favour towards us.

Whereas on the other hand, if we perverfely run counter to the admonitions of this guide, it will avail us nothing that our being permitted to take our course proves it agreeable to the fecret Will; for God does not punish in anger, nor for having been difappointed of his purpose; a cause of refentment which can never befall him; but with the view of a phyfician who prescribes a smart operation necessary to cure a distemper that would destroy the patient, or infect the neighbourhood : and if we regard our vicious dispositions in this light, which is the true one, we must behold them with the fame averfion we fhould a loathfome difeafe, whether we apprehend it brought upon us by our own mismanagement, or inflicted by the hand of heaven; which averfion once become hearty and ftrong,

ftrong, may be trufted to take its chance for the effect it will have upon our conduct.

§. 41. For it is not fo material to give a right judgement upon what is past and cannot be undone, as to take right measures for the future. Therefore left any should encourage themfelves in indolence, or wrong doing, under pretence that fince the Will of God is always punctually fulfilled, whatever shall be done, good or bad, must be conformable to that Will, fo they need not fcruple to take the courfes they like, being fure to accomplifh it at all events: let them confider, that fince that Will shall take effect at all events, they may as well accomplish it by doing right, as wrong, being equally fure either way, that what they shall do will be the thing that was to come to pass; if then the Will of God be done in both cafes, and they have their choice" in what manner they shall accomplifh

^a For we may place the matter in this light, as having it in our option, with respect to events within our power, to determine what shall be the Will of God. If

plifh it, had they not better choofe the manner most advantageous to themfelves, than one pernicious and destructive to them?

soth mitons, as michaele and

If at any time we can know the tendency of all caufes in act, we may know what is the Will of God in that inftance: therefore where the powers of men are thofe caufes, we may know that Will, by knowing the turns that human volition fhall take; and wherever we can, by our refolves; give the turn to our own volition, God leaves us at liberty to determine his Will. Nor is there greater abfurdity in this thought, than in conceiving a mother permitting her child to determine which way fhe fhall lead him, or a king his deferving fubject what title of honour he fhall confer upon him.

- Suppose a man fays to me, I got drunk laft night; therefore it was the Will of God, becaufe done. Indeed I was bloody fick this morning : but then it was beft I fhould be fo, becaufe finding a place in the plan of Providence. Very well; but is this a reason why you fhould get drunk again to night ? For if you keep fober, that will likewife be God's Will: and if you have no qualms to-morrow, that will be the beft, becaufe obtaining a place in the fame plan. Since then either way will conduct you furely to that ultimate best known only to God, why should you not take the cleanest, safest road, rather than involve yourself in the filth and dangers of debauchery? Nor were the cafe different could you swallow ever fo much without being fick or forry: for the notices of your moral fenfe,

For our bufinels is to purfue our own trueft interefts; we have nothing to do with the fecret Will; that will work itfelf out without our follicitude to compleat it : the end affigned us to work out, is none other than our own happinels, to be purfued carefully and industrioully, according to the lights afforded us.

Good and evil lie before us; we have powers of action, with liberty to use them: if our powers at any time be limited, we have still fome scope to range in; if our passions, or evil habits abridge our liberty, still we may strive and struggle against them: in all cases there is something or other wherein we may exert our endeavours; let us then apply them where they may turn most to our benefit; but above

fenfe, and the judgement of confiderate perfons diffuading excefs, are an evidence you have reafon to confide in, for the reality of mifchiefs you may not immediately difcern. So you have no concern with that Will which is verified only by the event, but may confult your own liking; provided you do not confine your regards to your prefent liking, but extend them to the confequences, which you may vehemently diflike.

all

all beware of reducing ourfelves to fuch a deplorable condition, as that even mercy and loving kindnefs must lay a heavy weight of punishment upon us in order to effect its gracious purposes.

Fate.

§. 42. There is still another quarter of the wilderness we have not yet explored, where the giant Fate stalks along with irresistable strides, bearing down the forrest like tender blades of corn before him, forcing his passage through ramparts and rocks; the textures of human contrivance are but as the dewy cobwebs of autumn acrofs his way; nor can Freewill find a place for the sole of her foot among the heapy ruins wherewith he bestrews the ground ².

But

.

• Upon my friend's flowing me this transition, I recollected that a little before we had read together the poems of Offian the fon of Fingal. I told him I thought here was an inftance of that fympathy he has talked of fo much, as being one principal channel by which we daily furnish our imagination with motives, affections, fentiments, and trains of thought. I know, fays I, the ftar from whence you catched this fpark of the

But before we enter into an examination of the courfes of Fate, let us, according to our ufual cuftom, endeavour to underftand what is properly meant by the word. We find it often confounded with Neceffity,

the fublime. Of the Pompeus rather, fays he. But when we take a frefh fympathy, it is apt to hang loofe upon us like *Horace*'s purple rag, until incorporated in time among the old trains.

These sympathies, coufin Comment, are helpful to form and improve the flile: and it is neceffary to ftore in variety of them from different quarters, or elfe we shall be fervile copiers instead of bold imitators. You are right, coufin Search, fays I. But may not this variety be multiplied too far ? For where will you find readers with the like variety of taftes? And you have laid down, that when the trains fuggefted to an . auditor are fo diffimilar to those he has been accustomed to that they cannot poffibly run into one another, it generates antipathy inftead of fympathy. But as you have managed the matter, there is nobody who will not find fomething to excite this antipathy. The grave will be difgusted to fee you handle the most ferious fubjects in the air of a novel or a comedy : and the gay will find themselves grievously disappointed, when you draw them by the lure of amufement into a metaphyfical fubtilty. And you know that what. naufeates, hangs longer upon the palate than what is fuitable to the tafte. So that by aiming to pleafe every body, you will pleafe nobody: becaufe there is nobody who will not think you either too profound or too

Or

or the impulsive operation of necessary causes: so the *Stratonic* and *Democratic* Atheists ^b understood it, when they ascribed all

too playfull. Your remark, fays he, Coufin, is juft, provided I were to confult Reputation only. But who knows but that by blending the airy and the abftrufe, I may fhow the contemplative that it is poffible to be ferious without being folemn, to purfue inventions without injury to truth, and give a loofe to imagination without lofing one's underftanding: and if I have carried matters beyond bounds, they may proceed with better difcretion. On the other hand, by flourifhing about and pretending to amufe, I may bring the thoughtlefs unawares into a clofenefs of thinking, which they ufed to dread, as being incompatible with chearfulnefs.

Thus the converfation ended, as converfations generally do, each party retaining his own opinion.

^b They held atoms eternal and uncreated; and out of thefe, by their various collifions, affortments, and adhefions, the fouls of men, and all other productions were formed. *Strato* made his atoms fentient, but in the loweft degree, fo as not to be capable of a compleat perception; yet that a multitude of them clubbing forces might produce the brighteft Genius or ableft Politician.

Our Author has battled both these people, showing that Perception cannot be made up of what are no Perceptions; nor received by a number of atoms jointly, unless received entire by each of them fingly. For a found cannot be heard by a whole affembly, without being heard by every one of the persons composing

all events to Fate, that is, the actions of matter depending upon one another in a continued feries from all eternity: and *Homer's Moira crataia*, ftrong-handed fate, has been generally translated by the *Latin* poets, *dura Necessitas*, inflexible Necessity.

poling it : neither can whilpers heard by a thouland men, make together an audible voice. He observes further, that existence belongs only to individuals; a compound being a number, or collection of fubftances, and having no other existence than that of its parts. For if the king were to incorporate fix hundred men into a regiment, there would not be fix hundred and one Beings therefore, one for the regiment, and one for each of the men, inftead of only fix hundred there were before; nor were he to break it again would their be a Being the lefs in his kingdom. So neither when a multitude of atoms run together to compose a human body, is there a Being more than there was before : nor would there be a Being loft out of nature upon its diffolution. But no man can doubt of his own existence, or that he has a perfonality belonging to him diffinct from all other Beings: for I can never ceafe to be myfelf, nor become another perfon. Therefore there is one Being the more in nature for my existence; and were I annihilated there would be a Being the lefs. From hence he infers the individuality of the mind, or fpirit of man, and confequently its perpetual duration : for nature can only deftroy compounds by diffolving their parts, but individuals cannot be deftroyed without a miracle, that is, an immediate exertion of Omnipotence.

192

Fate.

But I conceive these two very different things in common understanding, if we may reckon Neceffity as here used a common idea, for I rather take neceffary agency to be terms belonging to the speculative vocabulary; but apprehend that operations' whereto they may be applicable, 'cannot. upon that account be stiled the work of Fate, in propriety of language. The circulation of fap in vegetables, the contraction and dilatation of their fibres, the action of the fun, air and mould, contributing to make them yield their feveral fruits, are all neceffary agencies : yet when a man plants a peach-tree, can you properly fay it is therefore fated that he shall gather peaches and not plumbs or filberds therefrom; or if he fows oats in his field, does he think any thing of a fatality against his reaping wheat or barley? So neither if we knew a collection of atoms having motions among them which must form a regular world, fhould we efteem every thing

thing fatal that might be produced by them.

But Fate, derived from the Latin, Fari, fignifying to fpeak, must denote the word fpoken by fome intelligent Being, who has power to make his words good; fo that whatever he fays shall be done, will infallibly come to pass; and does not at all relate to the causes or manner whereby it is accomplished, unless those causes be made to act in confequence of the word spoken.

As to the *Parcæ*, fuppofed in heathen mythology to fpin the thread of life, and by their fciffars to determine the period of it, I fhould underftand this thread only to express the feries of events befalling every man, not the feries of causes operating to bring them forth. And the Pagans feem unfettled in their notions concerning the author of Fate; fometimes it is their Jove who fixes it by his arbitrary decree, as in the ill fucceffes of the *Grecian* army;

• Yet Chryfippus, Seneca, and the Stoics, fpeak in this ftile, thereby extending the word to a fenfe not belonging to it in common language.

fome-

194

Fate.

fometimes he is only an executive power, fubordinate to the *Parcæ*, compelled by their fpinning, to do or permit what he does not like, as in the death of *Sarpedon*^d.

However, leaving them to their own imaginations, with us who acknowledge one fupreme Governour fubordinate to nothing nor controulable by any other Power, Fate or Deftiny, must be the fame with the decree of the Almighty; nor can we doubt that whatever he has decreed will not fail of coming to pass.

§. 43. But this decree works no effect of itfelf, being no efficient caufe; for if you order your fervant to do a thing, the bufinefs is done by the efficacy of his action, not of your's; a command given to a fubordinate, we shall acknowledge com-

^d And fometimes himfelf fubjected to their laws: for we learn from Ovid, that he remembered a time in the bofom of fate, wherein the fea, the earth, and imperial palace of heaven fhould be wrapt in flames: Yet it feems he knew fo little the certainty of that time, that he was afraid the madnefs of *Phaeton* might anticipate it.

7

pulfive;

pullive; therefore if any man knows of a decree iffued from the Almighty concerning fomething he is to do, I fhall never advife him to ftrive against it, nor think himsfelf at liberty to do the contrary.

But it is not this kind of decrees that are supposed to generate Fatality, which arifes from those unknown to us, confining our actions to the course fuited for bringing forth the deftined event: yet even in this cafe it is not the word fpoken and never heard by us, but fomething confequent upon it that impofes the Fatality. We are told indeed, that God faid, Let there be Light, and there was Light; yet we cannot imagine the Light fprung forth without fome exertion of Omnipotence to produce it; for when afterwards he faid, Let us make man after our own image, nevertheless man was not made until he moulded the dust of the earth into a human body, and breathed thereinto the breath of life : therefore when we fay God created all things by his word, we do not understand that they produced themfelves out of non-

O 2

196

entity, in obedience to the order given ², but intend only to express the facility wherewith the divine operations are performed fimilar to that of a man in authority, caufing what he pleafes to be done upon the word of command.

Very true, you fay: nobody imaginesthe found of words fpoken can work any thing. But when God pronounces his decree, he accompanies it with fome act of power efficacious and irrefiftible to enforce the execution : or he watches over the tendency of fecond causes, and turns them by his fecret influence to co-operate towards bringing forth the deftined event: in both cafes he abridges human liberty; for what is ordained must inevitably come to país; nor can all the art or power of man turn it aside; for the Fatality hanging over us confines our choice to one certain train of objects, or by privately counteracting us, baffles our utmost endeavours, when turned the contrary way.

* Nor that this order was an efficient caufe of their exiftence.

§. 44. This feems to be the ordinary way of confidering this matter, and the concomitant exertion of power makes the difference between a Decree and a Command, for both are supposed to proceed from the word of God. We are told, he faid, Let there be Light, and there was light : we are likewife told, that he faid, Thou shalt not murther; thou shalt not steal; thou *(halt not commit adultery*; neverthelefs men do still murder and steal, and commit adultery, notwithstanding the word spoken. So the word of God operates nothing of itself when delivered as a command, nor unless when delivered as a decree : because in the latter cafe only, it is accompanied with an exertion of Omnipotence, or a determination to exert it when occasion shall require.

But the idea of a determination, to ule power whenever requisite for accomplishing a decree, arises from our narrow conception of the proceedings of God taken from our own manner of proceeding, as obferved already in §. 20. and the latter part O 3 of 198

of §. 29. For when we refolve upon the compaffing of any diftant purpole, we can fcarce ever lay our measures fo furely but that they may fail of the iffue intended; fo we are forced to watch over and correct them from time to time as we shall find occafion; or accidents may intervene which will require our further endeavours to prevent their defeating our defign ; or many times we know not what measures are proper until we have feen the tendency of other caufes, and conduct of other perfons any ways affecting the end we have in view; and then we must employ fuch power and skill as we are masters of, in order to bring things into the train we would have them From this experience of ourfelves, take. we are led to think the fame of the Almighty, whom we conceive as having destined certain particular events, but'in general left the powers of nature and free agents to take their own courfe, until they chance to take a tendency contrary to his defigns, and then he controuls and turns them

Fate.

them by his fecret influence, fo as to make them co-operate therewith.

Now a little reflection may fhow how injurious this notion is to the wifdom and power of God, reprefenting him as fixing indeed upon certain purpofes, but uncertain in what manner they fhall be brought to pafs, until the tendency his fecond caufes fhall happen to take points out the meafures neceffary for turning them into their deftined courfe; and thus giving chance a fhare in the government of the world, liable indeed to his controul, but working of herfelf whenever he does not interfere, and even furnifhing employment for his wifdom and power, by the errors fhe commits.

§. 45. But when we confider, that all events, as well those effected fortuitous as others, must proceed from certain causes, which derived their existence and efficacy mediately or immediately from the first; and when we contemplate his Omniscience, extending to every thing that can be sup-O 4 posed poled the object of knowledge, we thall find realon to convince us that nothing comes to pals unlefs in confequence of fome act of his; and that whenever he acts, he knows precifely what he does, together with the remotest and minutest confequences to refult from his doings.

For what bounds fhall we fet to his intelligence? If our own lies confined within a finall compass, it is owing to the feantinels of our organs, those neceffary instruments of our perception. We have but two hands, so can touch no more than they will reach to; we have eyes only before us, so can behold no further than half the circle furrounding us: the tablet of our memory, the chart of our imagination; the line of our reflection, have their appointed measures, so we can recollect, or calculate, or contemplate no more than the ideas they contain.

But God perceives not by organs, neither meditates by animal fpirits, or the little fibres of the brain, nor receives his notices by channels, whofe number or contents might

might be computed, fo as to determine the precife quantity they are capable of conveying. What then is there to fet the limitation to his knowledge; or by what rule or measure can we ascertain the bounds ? Can he comprehend a million of ideas, and no more? Does he clearly difcover all events to happen within the enfuing century, and no longer? Do the concerns of empires fo occupy his thoughts, that he has none to spare for the peafant, the labourer, or the beggar ? Are the affairs of men fo burthenfome to his mind, that he has no room to think of the moufe and the wren, the emmet and the mite, the green myriads of the peopled grafs, the manytribed weeds of the field, or the dancing motes that glitter in the noontide beams?

Since then we know of no boundaries to circumfcribe the divine Omnifcience, but that it may extend to every thing without overlooking any thing, and difcern remoteft confequences in their prefent caufes, why fhould we fcruple to admit that he gave being to those caufes with a view to their

their confequences ? and on the formation of a world difpofed his fubftances, material and fpiritual, with fuch properties, powers, fituations, motions and ideas, as fhould produce the exact feries of events he intended to bring forth ?

In this cafe there is no occafion nor room for controuling or altering the operation of fecond caufes, they being already adjufted to anfwer all the purpofes they were defined to compleat. And if there be fupernatural interpofitions (which I neither affirm nor deny) we cannot fuppofe them made upon unforefeen emergencies to fupply defects in the original contrivance, but comprized therein, as being judged proper for manifeftation of the divine power and government to intelligent creatures, and worked up into one uniform plan, together with the operations of fecondary agents.

§. 46. In this view of the æconomy of Providence, we fee that any abfolute decree or fecret fatality to enforce the execution of a defign against the tendency of fecond

fecond caufes to turn it afide, must be fuperfluous, provision being already made in perfect wildom for every event which is to take effect by disposition of the caufes proper to give it birth, nor will any of those caufes deviate into another tendency than that they were calculated to take.

Thus it appears, that all things fall out according to the will and difpolition of God, and conformably to the fcheme of his Providence, working for the moft part, if not always by the miniftry of material or voluntary agents: but the methods whereby this miniftry is conducted are various, Some parts of the plan are accomplifhed by the choice and industry of man, inftigated thereto by appetites, judgements, imaginations, defires, obligations, dangers, and other motives; other parts are executed by the flated laws of nature, fuch as the inftinct ^a of brutes, action of the ele-

^a Which, we have feen in a former note, is fomething between neceffary and free Agency; but in general effimation, feems ranked under the former. And what we do ourfelves without reflection, or confcioufpefs, is commonly filled mechanical.

ments

ments, powers of vegetation, qualities of foils, changes of feafons, and vicifitudes of night and day; and others brought about by the courfes of fortune dependant upon the fituations ^b of fubftances, and their mutual applications upon one another, to us accidental and uninveftigable.

Fate.

But what proceeds from the two first of these causes, we do not usually ascribe to the hand of Fate: for nobody looks upon it as a Fatality that last winter is now succeeded by summer; that the days are long, the air warm, the corn and fruits begin to ripen, for all these are natural, nor could any body expect things should have fallen out otherwise. So neither do we think a parent fated to put his fon out to school,

^b The powers of fecond caufes belong to Nature; but their concurrence, or coming to where they may operate, lies within the province of Fortune. That flame fhould burn wood is nothing ftrange: but that the candle fhould be left clofe to the wainfcot was unlucky. So we know well enough there are caufes in nature capable of raifing a ftorm: but that they fhould be ready at hand to raife it with violence, and drive it upon our forefts, or our houfes, makes the misfortune.

for

205

for it was his defire to give him a good education, and his choice and judgement directed him to the proper methods for effecting it.

Therefore the laft class of caufes only remains for the province of Fate, to wit, fuch whose operations are fortuitous and unaccountable, that is, beyond the reach of human forefight and fagacity to difcover; nevertheless they must have some certain springs and issues, as well as the motions of nature or actions of men.

§. 47. Thus the fame events lie under the difpofal of Fate and of Fortune, and both terms take their rife from our manner of conceiving things. Chance is no agent nor power, but the creature only of imagination, deriving its birth from our ignorance; for when we fee caufes at work, but know not their tendency, we fay it is a chance what they will produce: therefore that which is chance to one man may be none to another, who has better information tion or more judgement to difeern the train things are taking, and the official version

If a die were to be thrown, the caft would be produced by the motions of the thrower's arm, the shape of the box, inequalities of the table, and other imperceptible circumftances, of which we can make no estimate, therefore we deem it to lie under the power of Chance; but were the caft to determine between two malefactors which of them should fuffer, we should then think it a matter worthy referring to the fupreme difpofer of all events, for the lot cometh from the Lord ; yet still being uncertain what means he will employ, or what effect they shall take, we attribute the decifion to his Will or Decree, fkipping over that undifcernible chain of caufes lying between his first appointment and those now in act.

١

Therefore Fate and Fortune feem for the most part to claim a concurrent jurifdiction, many tracts lying within the province of both: and under this apprehension we express ourfelves upon common occasions; for

for when we hear of a man falling in battle, we fay indifferently, it was his Fate, or his Fortune to be flain; and of a young perfon intended to be fent abroad, but uncertain in what bufinefs, or what place he may find opportunities for fettling, we fay, it is doubtful where his lot may fall, where fortune may carry him, or his fate or deftiny fix him.

But to which of these powers we shall ascribe the influence, depends upon the objects we take into contemplation: while we regard only the secret springs and unforeseen incidents which may affect an event, we deem it in the hand of Fortune: but when we look on further to that intelligent Being, who is the disposer of all events, we conceive that those springs will work, and incidents fall out, according to his direction and decree.

Neverthelefs it is obvious, as we obferved before, that a decree will work nothing without an application of power to enforce the execution of it, and when fuch application has been made by provision

of

20"

of the proper means for bringing an event to país, a decree or declaration of the purpole intended becomes needlefs: for the requifite measures being once taken, will have their effect, whether any word be spoken concerning them or no. Therefore the iffues of things proceed, and fortune derives her efficacy, from the provision not the decree of the Almighty, from the work of his hand, not the word of his mouth; and this latter, if any such there were, added nothing to the acts of Omnipotence, but must be delivered for some other purpose than to ensure the completion of his design.

§. 48. Hence it appears, that in using the terms Fate, Decree or Destiny, we speak after the manner of men; for it being customary with us, whenever we resolve upon some distant work, to declare our intentions to persons under our influence, who may affist in compleating it, and to fix a determination in our minds which may render us vigorous, and keep us watchful

in

in the profecution, we conceive of God as making the like declared or mental determination with regard to every fpot he comprifes within the plan of his Providence.

Then again, being fenfible this determination cannot operate upon the courfes of fortune as a command, yet that fomething must operate to put them in motion, and being unable to trace, or even to conceive a chain of caules extending from the first formation of the plan to all these multifarious events, we cannot help acknowledging must come to pass by the divine appointment, we get an obscure idea of an irrefiftible force, a fomething we cannot explain nor account for its existence, which we call a Fatality, which perpetually hangs over fecond caufes, constraining their motions, or like an adamantine wall, confining them within their appointed courfe, from whence they would have a natural propenfity to deviate. Thus Fatality becomes disjoined from the decree, and lofes the proper import belonging to it by its derivation, being now no longer a fatum Inamilian P 01

or word fpoken, but one knows not well what; an emanation from it, like light from the fun-beams, a power without an agent to exert it; for when God has fpoken, his action ceafes, and the Fatality is a confequence of what he has faid.

That this is the fense, if a fense it may be called, that men ordinarily affix to the term, appears by the Atheifts employing it, who acknowledge no intelligent Being who might fari, that is, fpeak or iffue a decree : for being called upon to affign a caufe for the laws and eftablishments of nature, they afcribed them to a blind Fatality, working upon the mais of matter throughout the universe, and driving it into a regular form. But if we regard, etymology, a blind fatality is as abfurd an expression as that of a dumb decree, or an unintended defign. The Epicureans alone difcarded Fate upon most unphilosophical principle, that a events may enfue, fuch as the declination of atoms, without any prior caufe whatever to produce them: but all who admitted an eternal First Cause, whether intelligent 59

telligent or unfentient, feem to have entertained a notion of Fatality.

This confuied and indeterminate notion opened the door to judicial Aftrology^{*}, for though the ftars were fuppofed by their pofitions to affect the lives of men, I never yet heard it attempted to be fhown in what manner, or by what mediums they operated: but a conformity being once fancied between the fucceffes of human transactions and afpects of the heavenly bodies, it was a fhort way to talk of a Fatality, though nobody could tell why, or how, or by what channels the connection fhould be effected.

The like may be faid of the Parca, whofe finging answers to the decree utter-

^a And to the Art Magic, and Prognoffications by dreams, omens, prodigies, prickings into the bible, ftrangers in the candle, fcreechings of owls, influences of a rainy *Friday* upon the following week, and other the like trumpery, maintained by the Stoics in *Tully*'s Divination, and by our modern old women in the nurfery. For all thefe are not effecemed as Revelations, but as a confent or fympathy in things, between which the Philofopher and Naturalift cannot find the leaft connection.

ed, and could have no other effect than to amufe themfelves and lighten their tafk; but it was the thread they fpun which determined the duration and colour of men's lives beyond the power of *Jove* himfelf to alter: yet we never hear of their having any communication with fublunary affairs, or acting as efficient caufes upon any thing moving here; neverthelefs upon their fpinning, there inftantly arofe a fympathetic energy in the caufes at work upon earth, drawing them to produce an iffue conformable to what was fpun.

§. 49. We fee from the foregoing obfervations, how the term Fate has flid off its original bafis, being departed from its firft fignification, that of a decree or refolve of the Almighty to a fomething generated thereby, an undefinable influence, refiding neither in body, nor foul, nor fubftance, but an abftract force or activity ^a, hovering

^a Which there is no agent to exert. Not God, for his action was compleated long ago, upon iffuing the decree: nor fecond caufes, for they are fuppofed to be turned afide from their natural operation by the Fatality.

0

as

as it were in the air, and operating upon the caufes of things as they feverally begin to act.

Nor yet do men keep always fleady to this idea of Fate in their common converfation ; for we often hear them talk of the Fate of a convict criminal lying in the hand of the Prince who has power to pardon or to order 'execution'; the lover waits for the decision of his mistrefs to fix his Fate; the poet talks of phyficians iffuing mandates in arreft of Fate b, and an unexpected accident or arrival of a timely fuccour is thought fometimes to change the Fate of a battle: whereas if we regard the genuine notion of Fate, it was fixed long ago by the decree of heaven; nor is it in the power of man, or any natural agent, todetermine or stop, or change, or affect it in any respect.

 With looks demure they grafp the golden bait, And iffue mandates in arrest of fate.

THURSTON.

Thefe

Who being a lawyer, took his metaphor from the law courts, arrefling or flopping judgement after a verdict for irregularities flown in the proceedings.

These variations of language do not disturb us in our ordinary discourses, for the context or occasion introducing them moulds our words into the shape that is proper; but men of thought and abstraction, defirous of affixing constantly the fame ideas to their words, find themfelves difappointed when they light upon a term . of vague and unstable fignification; for as we generally think in words, and their fense in the various phrases whereto we join them, is determined by cuftom; we are led infenfibly in the progress of our reasonings to understand them differently, from whence great confusion and perplexity muft unavoidably enfue.

Therefore the fcience of language, and exact obfervation of ideas adhering thereto, would help us greatly in our difcoveries of nature; for if men could fix upon terms not liable to variation of fenfe or mifapprehenfion, their difputes would be fhortened, and they might quickly arrive at fo much knowledge as is attainable by human underftanding. We have found no reafon

reason hitherto to difregard the admonitions of our prefent patroness Philology, they having been helpful to us upon several occasions; and she informs us, the word Fate carries a very loose and indeterminate signification.

For this reafon I with it were quite expunged from the philofophical vocabulary, and Providence fubfituted in its room, which I conceive would render our thoughts clearer and lefs intricate, and give them a freer progrefs when turned upon the government of the world; for the provisions of heaven in the original disposition of adequate causes may answer all purposes, as well those accomplished by natural as accidental means, or the motions of free agency.

§. 50. But men find a difficulty in conceiving of abfolute dominion, without a coercive authority or compulsion exercised upon the subjects under it : which makes us all so fond of power as a necessary means for bringing our purposes to bear against the opposition of other agents which might P_4 attempt

P. 1 - 5

216

Fate.

attempt to defeat them. Yet in many instances, as has been remarked in §. 10. we ourfelves can make provision for defigns wherein other perfons are to concur, and guide their conduct fo far as we know what will move them, and have the proper motives in our hands, without pretending to any authority or compulsive power over them. And if there be always fome hazard of a difappointment, it is becaufe we can never fee thoroughly the exact state of their defires, nor what external accidents, fuch as weather, difeafe; or the like, may difturb the fuccels of our fchemes: but were there nothing extraneous to interfere, and had we' aperfect knowledge of men's minds, much more, were their inclinations and judgements of our framing, we should need no despotic jurifdiction nor controuling power to guide them into what courfes of behaviour we pleafed.

Now there is nothing external to the work of God. The laws of nature bringing forth her various productions were of his

his eftablishment : the workings of chance followed from fome determinate caufes, though to us unknown; these again from other prior, and fo on in a continual channel from the fources first opened by the exertion of his power; for no event, however cafual, can happen without fomething occafioning, it to fall out in that manner : the actions of men proceed according to their apprehenfions and judgements thrown upon them by their conftitution or temperament, by education, by company and occurrences befalling them in life; all which were conveyed by nature or fortune; and therefore must be referred to the origin from whence they derived. For every effect must be produced by the action of fome agent material or fpiritual, or the concurrence of feveral, and must follow according to the manner of that action being exerted; which manner was determined by fome impulse or motive impressed from elsewhere; nor can we stop until we arrive at fome act of Omnipotence.

Thus

Thus the face of things, as well in the moral as natural kingdoms, refults from the qualities, positions², and motions God

of a lin

• The fecondary qualities of bodies refult from their form, which is nothing elfe than a certain polition of their component parts : for the fame fhillings laid upon a table, will make a fquare, a lozenge, a ring, or a crofs, according as you place them; and the fame particles of matter will make grafs, or mutton, or human flefh, according as they are difpofed among one another by digeftion. The modifications of our organs occasioning them to imprefs their feveral perceptions, can be conceived no otherwife than as depending upon their figures or motions : fo that though Thought be neither figure nor motion, it follows precifely upon the changes made in either; and this whether we work those changes ourfelves, or have them produced before us by other caufes.

The fecondary qualities of fpirit depend upon its polition, in fome organization; for if the fpirit of a man were placed in his great toe, he would neither fee nor hear, nor understand; and if it were placed in the organization of an oyster, perhaps he might have no more fense than that stupid animal. Motion ferves only to change politions into one another, and what effect it shall have depends upon prior positions: for the fame motion of a bullet will destroy this man or that, according to the position of the musket, or places they occupy: and the fame particles of beef are capable, or not, of being moved about by the circulation for our nourishment, according to their internal position in the joint when it is raw or roafted, or putrefied.

gave



219

gave to his fubstances at the formation of a world. It remains only, that we afk ourfelves the queftion, whether he extended his plan to a compass larger than he could comprehend himfelf, or gave birth to caufes which might produce events unthought of by him, or more numerous than he could grafp in his Omnifcience? If we answer in the negative, we must needs acknowledge that provision was made at the beginning for all that train of events, and accomplishment of those purposes we have feen, or shall hereafter see effected.

But experience teftifies, that this provifion leaves many things in our power; and circumfcribes us in many other refpects; we lay fchemes, and take measures appearing certain to fucceed, but find them failin the iffue, and that by accidents we could not have expected, nor can account for their happening; our reason deferts us in time. of need; we commit blunders, and give into follies we could not have thought ourfelves capable of: tempest, carthquakes, famines, pestilences, and destructive difeases 220

eafes arife from no natural caufes that we can difcern; and our experience of those things gives us the notion of Fatality. Therefore Fate, if we will needs employ the term in our speculations, is that part of the divine provision producing events which would not have ensued by the known laws of nature, nor operation of observable causes, nor contrivances of man, but are rather contrary to his endeavours.

at the new and the first at an at

§. 51. Seneca, in Nat. Quaft. Lib. II, cap. 36. defines Fate the neceffity of all things and actions, which no force can break through and he feems herein to have given Fate the import belonging to it in common propriety of language; for the courfes of Fate are always deemed irrefiftible and unalterable; nor do we apply the term unlefs to cafes wherein the will and power of man has no concern. Therefore when a perfon fails in a diftemper, we fay it was his Fate to die, becaufe we fuppofe his wifh and endeavours were bent upon preventing it : but if he efcares,

escapes, we do not fay he was fated to recover, but at most that his Fate was not yet come, that is, has not yet operated upon him; for this was the effect of the cares taken to fave him.

If we happen to ruin a fcheme we were extremely fond of accomplishing through fome palpable misconduct of our own, we think ourselves under a fatal infatuation, becaufe every body is conceived willing to employ his best judgement for his own benefit; from whence comes the obfervation, that whom Jove would deftroy, he first deprives of their understanding: but if we chance to fucceed beyond expectation by a more than ordinary dexterity of management, we think nothing of a Fatality, becaufe the unufual clearnefs of judgement and fuccefs confequent thereupon, were things agreeable to our wifh, and effects of bestirring ourfelves in the exercife of our faculties.

So likewife a fatal accident is that which brings on an event, we are extremely averfe to: whereas a lucky incident is never termed fatal,

fatal, becaufe tending to further our advancement towards fomething we defire.

But if Seneca was right in calling Fate a Neceffity, which no force can break thro', we cannot think him fo in the extent he has given to its dominion, comprehending all things and all actions: for this fwallows up the whole province of Freewill, to which Fate and Neceffity, in every body's understanding, are counted diametrically opposite: for what is fated to happen does not lie in my power to prevent, and what depends upon my pleasure and option, is yet undetermined by any Fatality.

Nor let it be thought we injure him, by taking his expression too strictly; for he goes on, in cap. 38. to particularize in matters belonging directly to human management. If, fays he, it be fated that such a young person shall become eloquent, it is likewise fated that he shall study thetoric; if that he shall grow rich, it is fated that he shall trade to foreign parts. In like manner his brother Stoic, *Chrysppus*, infists, in *Tully de Fato*, cap. 13. that when

a

a fick man is fated to recover, it is confated that he shall fend for a physician; to which it might be added, and that the doctor shall use his best skill, and the apothecary dispense his recipes properly.

But any common eye may fee, that thefe Fates do not carry fuch a neceffity as the force of man cannot break through: for the fcholar, if he pleafes, may neglect his fludies, the young trader fquander away his flock in extravagancies and debaucheries, the fick perfon perfift obflinately in refufing help, the doctor deftroy his patient, or the apothecary impofe upon both by neglecting to provide good drugs, or mixing up ingredients that will do mifchief.

What then ! are not eloquence, riches, and health, the bleffings of heaven ? are they not given to those whom God thinks proper, and withheld from whom he pleafes ? Or can any, to whom he defigns a favour, ever fail of receiving the effects of his bounty? By no means; nor does this confequence follow from our rejection of Fatality; 224

Fate.

Fatality: for tho' all things are not fated, yet all things are wifely provided, fo as to take the train requifite for compleating whatever events were contained within his plan. Thus the orator and merchant were provided by education, example, and other natural means, with a disposition for improving the talents and opportunities put into their hands; the fick man is provided with fenfe to know the value of life, and fondnefs for its prefervation; the medical affiftants with compassion to a fellow-creature in diftrefs, with skill and diligence and a defire to maintain their credit in their professions: and these dispositions will infallibly put them upon taking those meafures voluntarily, which they had full power and free liberty to have omitted.

Thus the will of God is done without employing the compulsive force of Fate, or rigid arm of Necessity. But the difficulties that have always perplexed the speculative upon this subject, spring from their not observing the double fense of the word *possible*, as it relates to power or to contingency, remarked

in



in the foregoing pages, §. 30, 31; for want of which they could not conceive how any thing could be left to the power and option of man, without inferring a poffibility that he might defeat the purposes of God: but having well fettled that diftinction in our minds, and taking along with us that the behaviour of men follows upon their apprehensions and sentiments which refult from the feen and unfeen fprings employed by God in his adminifration of the moral world, we may eafily comprehend how it may be poffible, that is, in the power of man, in many inftances to fruftrate his defigns; neverthelefs he may fo perfectly know what will be the defires and thoughts of their hearts, that there is no poffibility, that is, no danger, they should purfue any other than the particular tenour of conduct most conducive thereto.

§. 52. The effence of Fate lying in its unchangeablenefs and independence on the turns of Freewill, the powers of different perfons being various, and coming or go-Q ing

ing according as opportunity changes, there is no paradox in afferting, that the fame event may be under the arbitrary difpofal of one man, which is fated and neceffary to another, and may be matter of choice today, which was effeemed the work of Fate, yefterday, and may be fo again to-morrow.

Suppose you and I could give evidence against somebody of a capital offence unknown . to any body elfe; but there being fome favourable circumstances in his cafe, we went into a room together to confult whether we fhould make the discovery or no: this we fhould be apt to call fitting to fix his Fate; and any body upon feeing us come out, and knowing what we had been about, might properly afk, well, what is his Fate? is he doomed to die? But though our decifion be reckoned Fate, with respect to the culprit, as being unalterable and inevitable by him, yet we should not esteem ourfelves under a Fatality or Neceffity to profecute, because it would still remain in our power to do it or forbear.

Marriages



Marriages are commonly faid to be made in heaven; yet it is of the very effence of marriage to have the free confent of the parties; for the folemnization follows upon their will and defire; but the caufes influencing their choice were not of their own procurement, but extraneous and fortuitous to them. A man determined to fettle in the world, but unprovided of his object, may think it in the hand of Fate or Fortune what qualified party he shall meet with; but when the acquaintance is made, the liking fixed, and matters agreed on both fides, things proceed thence forward under the direction of Choice and Freewill: then again, if afterwards the prove a fhrew, he may chance to curfe his ftars for subjecting him to fo cruel a Fate.

The fall of *Troy* was faid to be written in the book of Fate before its foundation; yet the parties inftrumental thereto, *Paris* and *Helen*, the *Grecian* Princes, the council of *Priam* refufing reflitution, acted by paffion, contrivance, defign, and deliberation, those fprings of free agency: and Q 2 during during the fiege, the poor *Trojans* used their utmost efforts to ward off the stroke of Fate, which nevertheless fell inevitably upon them.

Thus when Fate has begun his courfe, it opens at intervals to let in Freewill, who having played her part, the ftream clofes again, and involves all before it in irrefiftible neceffity.

From hence it appears, that in difquifitions upon this fubject our bufinefs is to enquire not fo much into the nature of things, as the import of expressions and state of ideas under contemplation; and we shall often find that the fame event, according to the perfons concerned in it, to the light wherein we place it, or to our confidering the whole or fome part only of the chain whereon it hangs, shall be either the work of Fate, the effect of Chance, or the product of human Industry, Forethought and Option. For Fate and Necessity being always opposed to free Choice, may be applicable to an Event or

not,

not, according to whose choice, or what act of the will you refer it.

If I lie under the power of a superiour in what manner to difpose of me, the determination is Fate to me, though matter of choice and deliberation to him. So I may effeem it in the hand of Fate to determine how I shall dispose of myself feven years hence, if I cannot by any prefent act of mine certainly direct my future refolves; but when the time of action comes, I shall then have it my power and option which way to turn myfelf: then again, after I have executed my choice and fixed my fituation, if I run back through the whole chain of caufes bringing me thereinto, the opportunities enabling, and inducements prevailing on me to take the part I did, which were not of my own procurement, I may be apt to call it the work of Fate.

No wonder then that fo variable and flippery a term fhould often prefent us with double lights, bewildering the most cautious traveller, like an *ignis fatuus*: wherefore, as I faid before, it were better we Q_3 could

230

5

could do entirely without it; for Providence feems a much clearer and fleadier idea; nor are there the like difficulties in underftanding how that, by the apt difposition of causes fuited to each respective purpose, may generate the laws of nature, suffape the windings of fortune, and produce the motives giving the turn to human volition.

§. 53. Let us now confider how far our conduct and condition in life may be cramped and controuled by this universal provision. We find ourfelves circumfcribed in our powers, our knowledge, and the fcope allotted us to exercise them. This nobody doubts. The feverities of winter fucceed the conveniencies of fummer; our weight binds us down to the earth, nor can we foar aloft like the fwallow. Tempests, diseases, and finister accidents come upon us inevitably, and many things fall out beyond our skill or power to prevent them : but want of skill and power is not want of liberty. Bars, obstructions, and

and reftraints confine us in the exercife of those powers we have; but there is a difference between freedom of action and freedom of will: the latter respects only fuch things as we have a natural ability to perform, and against which there lies no impediment to prevent the fuccess of our endeavours. But Freewill cannot proceed without inducements to move, and ideas to direct it; therefore that provision which fupplies us with these, is so far from overthrowing, that it is the basis and support of our freedom.

Nor would doubts arife concerning our poffeffion of this privilege, if we did not generally extend it beyond its proper object, which, ftrictly fpeaking, is no other than the prefent action in our power; but our prefent endeavours often have a tendency to diftant purpofes; and experience teaches us what they have been ufed to produce; therefore we efteem the confequences to be effected by them as under our power, and fubjects of our option: then, if fuch remote events fall out otherwife than expected,

Q 4

WC

we aferibe it to a Fatality; whereas the failure was really owing to particular circumftances we did not attend to, or the interfering of natural caufes we did not take into account.

More efpecially we conceive ourfelves mafters of our own ideas, and to have the conftant use of that judgement and difcretion we posses; therefore if they fail us at any time in some egregious misconduct, we apprehend ourfelves as having been under a fecret infatuation; because the proceeding being contrary to our prefent and former will and judgement, which we can some fearce believe could have varied so greatly in the interval, we conclude a force must have been put upon our Will to make it act so opposite to its own defigns.

But it is well known, that our apprehenfions are not always the fame, nor does reafon always operate with equal vigour; imagination varies her fcenes, diferetion falls off her guard, fancies ftart up, defires intrude, paffions beguile, and things prefent themfelves in unufual afpects, owing

to

to the ftate of our bodily humours, the mechanical play of our organization, prevalency of our habits, and appearance of external objects; all which are natural caufes acting with a regularity undifcernible to ourfelves. So there is no occafion for recurring to that unfubftantial Fatality fpoken of in §. 48. for Fate is fo much of the order of fecond caufes, as our Will has no fhare in carrying on, and our Underftanding no light to difcover.

Thus Fate and Freewill have their diflinct provinces, nor ever appear to clafh unlefs when we happen to miftake the boundaries; but if we efteem events within our power which depend upon other caufes, we may find ourfelves fruftrated, not by a force upon our will, but by having undertaken more, and carried our expectations further than we were warranted. For the giant Fate, though enormous in ftrength and ftature, never tramples upon Liberty, nor fo covers the ground as not to leave fome fpace for human Agency while employed in its proper offices. §. 54. For we have nothing to do with Events lying within the bofom of Fate, nor are we to take our measures upon any thing we may fancy contained there: it may affect the fucces, but cannot alter the prudence of our conduct, which consists in the conformity of our actions with the best lights of our judgement.

If God has any fecret purpole to accomplifh, no doubt he has provided caufes to work it out; our bufinels lies only with those caufes whose existence and tendency we can difcern; while we make the due use of them, so far as we have power and opportunity, we shall perform our little share in the execution of his plan.

When we have determined upon our point ever fo wifely, and projected our fcheme ever fo prudently, perhaps there may be a decree to a contrary effect which will baffle all our endeavours; but this can be no guide to us, nor object of our contemplation, until manifesting itself by the completion: in the mean time, if we find things things take a wrong turn unexpectedly, we are not from thence to infer there is a Fatality ^a upon them, for we cannot expect to penetrate into the fecret workings of Fate, which are purpofely concealed from us, but must employ our skill and industry to rectify our measures, while there remains any probability of success, that is, until we perceive invincible obstacles standing apparently in the way.

Nor have we the lefs range of action for the fecret fprings of events taking their certain course by the divine appointment,

^a Yet if we have often tried the fame fcheme unfuccefsfully, this is a reafon why we fhould defift from attempting it any more: not as convinced of a Fatality, but of a defectiveness in the scheme, or of there being fome natural obstacles which we do not perceive. For the frequency of an event is an evidence in multitudes of cases, of there being adequate causes to produce it again, though we may not inveffigate them. Thus if a farmer has feveral times planted a field with barley, but never could find a crop at harvest, he will do wifely to fow no more there; being perfuaded there is fomething either in the foil, or fituation, unfit for that grain, though he difcerns no apparent difference of either from other grounds. This observation would be very ufeful for projectors, who perfift obffinately in supporting theory against experience.

neither would our liberty be at all enlarged, if they were fet in motion by the fortuitous declination of Epicurus's atoms. Experience teaches that our ftrongeft expectations are liable to be frustrated, and our best projected schemes rendered abortive unaccountably; and we fhould stand equally at a loss how to ward off the disappointment whether it were to come by chance or by Fate, for we can as little conjecture what the wild workings of chance would produce, as the stated provisions of wildom: in both cafes we can only proceed according to what we fee, and put in use those methods which we judge most expedient. Nor would it prove less destructive of care and industry, if we should entertain a notion of luck brunning against us, than of a Fatality.

nation.

§. 55. There is one fpecies of Fate refpecting the condition of each man in ano-

^b Prevailing much among gamefters, fometimes doing them great detriment; and which by an eafy transition they often turn into Fatality.

ther

ther life dependant on his conduct in this, commonly called Predeftination. This, in many people's apprehenfion, carries with it the idea of a Fatality; for they fay the Saint cannot fin, nor the Sinner do right: yet it being obvious there can be neither right nor wrong, unlefs in things within our power and option, they fuppofe that though we have power to perform, we have none to choofe, fo there lies a force upon the will conftraining it to one particular choice.

But experience does not support this doctrine, for the wicked now and then use their power well, and it is too notorious that the righteous often fail of doing the good they might. Did *Peter* act right when he thrice denied his master? Or did *Pilate* act wrong in using endeavours to get *Jefus* released instead of *Barabbas?* and does not this manifest, that neither were under, a constant fatality, but left fometimes at least at liberty to depart from their general tenour of conduct?

237

Then

Then if any pretend that this general tenour, fo far as requifite to denominate the party good or bad, is influenced by the fatality of a decree; let them fearch into the receffes of the human heart, examine the judgements, defires, imaginations harbouring there, understand perfectly all the natural caufes anywife affecting them, and clearly difcern that none of these are adequate to the effect, before they are warranted to affert this. Nor let them build too haftily upon the dictates of authority, which are best explained by experience of facts, and are delivered in a language accommodated to the common conceptions of men, wherein we often afcribe events to the act of God, which were the refult of fecond caufes eftablished by him.

Therefore it may be true that God giveth us both to will and to do, without conftraining our Wills by his immediate and irrefiftible influence; as it is true, that he giveth us our daily bread, though he fends it not by fpecial meffengers, as he did to *Elias*, but by the provisions he made for the

the fruits of nature in the ftructure of plants, fertility of foils, kindly warmth of the fun, feafonable refreshments of dews and showers, and by the provisions he made for exerting human industry, and fixing an attachment to their several professions in the farmer, the miller, the mealman, and the baker^{*}.

§. 56. It must be acknowledged that the final state of every man, as well as all other events without exception, depends upon causes flowing from springs originally provided by the Almighty; and in this light it may be faid that none shall be faved whose names were not written in the book of life^b: but the writing in this book, if we

^a So are our fchools, our univerfities, our treatifes of divinity and morality, our hiftories, our encouragements for learning and induftry, our eftablifhments of divine fervices and fermons, fo many provifions made for giving us to will: and though now and then they may give us to will what we had better have let alone, yet we fhould find great mifs if we were totally deprived of them.

^b And the like may be faid with regard to other events as well as our future ftate. For none fhall be a (cholar)

we will employ the figure, has no efficacy, nor can limit our freedom, being no more than a declaration or record of the caufes in act, and operations of under-caufes flowing from them; which are equally matter of record, whether running in the channel of freewill, or of impulfe, force, and neceffity.

And the provisions now spoken of encroach least of any upon the province of free Agency; a man may have his bones broken, his fortune ruined, his life deftroyed, by earthquakes, tempests, plagues, or other accidents he cannot possibly guard against nor prevent; but his interests in futurity cannot be hurt, unless by some action he has power and liberty to forbear. Therefore is he free in whatever he does affecting those interests, notwithstanding

fcholar, a foldier, a merchant, a poffillion, or a chimney-fweeper; none fhall get to the *Eaft* or *Weft Indies*, nor fhall build a houfe, or lay out a garden, whofe names are not written in the book, as defined to thofe purpofes: that is, for whom caufes were not provided, enabling and leading them to the accomplifument.

4

the

the entry recorded, or provision preordained; for liberty, as we have feen before, depends upon the act enfuing the exertion of our power, not upon any thing antecedent, nor upon the motives or caufes inciting us to exert it: if we have talents, opportunities, understanding and difcretion, we have the fame freedom to use them by what means soever they came to us, whether by a fudden and accidental good fortune, or by a long feries of causes preappointed for that purpose.

But men are led by their averfenefs to trouble to extend the idea of their power beyond its proper bounds, they want to do fomething to-day whereby to enfure an indefeafible title to future happinefs, without leaving any thing for to-morrow, but to take their paftime in the manner moft agreeable to themfelves. This is miftaking their province, for they can never do their work fo compleatly but there will always remain fomething further to do: yet this does not affect their liberty to take fuch meafures as at prefent are feafible, for R what-

whatever be predefined concerning them, to-morrow they may still do fo much for themselves as the actions now in their power amount to.

Therefore it behoves us to fland always upon the watch, to obferve every fucceeding moment what comes into our power, and to employ it fo as may turn moft for our benefit: for Predefination rightly underftood, operates by our hands, and the courfe we fleer is always that it takes upon every particular occafion, unlefs when it employs external caufes not under our controul, and thefe we have no bufinefs with ; where indeed we could know the fuccefs depends folely upon fuch caufes ^b, our cares and

^b For our future conduct may be determined by them: we can only make our refolves properly, but whether they fhall remain in full colour and vigour depends in great measure upon the temperament of our bodies, the company we fall into, or temptations affailing us: fo much of thefe, as we cannot forefee nor provide againft, it would be fruitles to folicit ourfelves about, nor have we any thing elfe to do with refpect to them, than confide in that Providence which orders all things for the beft. But fo far as we can help ourfelves

and endeavours were superfluous, but in matters depending upon ourselves, our opinion or difbelief of their being predeftined in the manner above defcribed by a provision of the proper causes for enabling, moving, and directing us, how to beftir ourfelves, makes no alteration in the rule of our conduct. For if a merchant breeds up his fon to industry, instructs him in the misteries of trade, and furnishes him a competent flock, with a certain foreknowledge and determination that he shall make a fortune thereby : neverthelefs the fame diligence, the fame circumfpection, and the fame methods of proceeding will be requifite as if those advantages had fallen upon him accidentally, and the fuccefs been abfolutely unknown to every body.

§. 57. But it is not enough to take off the difcouragements against deliberation

ourfelves by any prefent act, either to prevent them, or prepare our minds against them, we may use the powers and opportunities put into our hands with the fame freedom, whether we conceive them derived to us by a preappointment, or otherwise.

R 2

and activity, unlefs we quiet the apprehenfions arifing in men's minds concerning their future proceedings: for fome difturb themfelves with the dread of a predetermination upon all their motions, which may turn them hereafter into the road of deftruction, notwithftanding the beft difpofitions they find at prefent in their hearts. But let them confider, that their prefent actions were as much predeftined as any they fhall perform hereafter, yet they find themfelves at full liberty to fhape them in fuch manner as they judge expedient; therefore they may depend upon having the like freedom at other times.

Well, but they know not what ideas may then flart up in their minds urging them to mifapply their powers. Is there not the like hazard attending the common affairs of life? for other events, as well as those affecting the moral character, are equally predestined by the provision of causes fuited to bring them forth. Yet who that lives in peace and plenty ever affrights himself with the thought that there

there may be fecret fprings at work which may deprive him of his health, his limbs, or his fubftance ? While things go on in a good train, and no danger difcernible to human circumfpection threatens, we reft contented with our fituation, unmolefted by imaginary terrors, and fo we may with refpect to our fpiritual concerns, for virtue improves itfelf, and good habits grow ftronger by exercife : therefore though our

^a Yet there are those who in the midst of affluence affright themfelves with the apprehenfion that they fhall want : but this is always looked upon as the effect of diftemper: and fo are the like terrors of any other kind. Few labour under more than one fort of these disturbances: he that fancies infections in the air does not think of wanting; and he that dreads the approach of want, is not follicitous about his future state. Therefore let each make himself confistent throughout, and learn from his eafinefs under the bare possibility of one milchief, to take courage against the like poffibility of another. Nor may there want room for honeft artifice in curing diftempers of this fort: an alarm raifed of rogues or fire would probably fufpend any doubts of the religious kind. For it is not unnatural that one terror fhould banifh another. I believe the old women upon the banks of the Wefer or the Fulda (if there be any still left unstarved) have fomething elfe to think on than Election and Reprobation.

246

final ftate remains in the hand of Providence, and we cannot penetrate the fecret councils of heaven, yet the right difpofitions we feel at prefent, are an evidence that provision is made for a happy iffue at laft, an evidence fufficient to exclude every thing more than a poffibility of our failing: nor were it expedient that this fhould be excluded, as being ferviceable to keep us vigilant, and guard us againft a fupineness of temper that might creep upon -us infenfibly.

Befides, let us examine wherein it would better our condition, if God were to revoke his Predeftination, and undo his provifion of caufes, fo far as relates to ourfelves : would this enable us by our prefent cares fo to bind our future conduct as that it could never run amifs ? and if not, how would matters be mended with us ? There would ftill remain a poffibility that after having begun well we might faint in the midway, and this event would become abfolutely fortuitous : but we fhould hardly find more comfort in thinking that our Fate

Fate depended upon the cast of a die than upon a Predetermination.

So then it might fairly be put to men's choice whether they had rather believe themfelves in the hand of Chance, or of a wife and gracious Governour: for the proceedings of wifdom are regular, and tho' we know not perfectly what belongs to goodnefs, we may form a judgement thereon fatisfactory to any reafonable perfon; but the flighty gambols of chance are objects of no fcience, nor grounds of any dependance whatever.

Nor should we find greater security in the privilege of indifference fo much vaunted by some, for this being controulable by no motives, it would avail us little to have a sober understanding and virtuous inclinations moving us to take a falutary course; for our Freewill of indifference might run counter to them all, nor could we have any affurance what turns it might take: which must throw us again into all the anxieties attendant upon the dominion of chance.

R 4

Thus

Thus whatever hypothefis we can frame, leaves as much room for apprehenfions as that of Predefination above defcribed, for while we conceive it operating not by a Fatality, but by an apt difpofition of fecond caufes, it gives as large a fcope to human freedom and forecaft, and induftry, as we have reafon from experience to think ourfelves poffeffed of, and as good ground of expectation from the fuccefs of our meafures as we are warranted in any light to entertain.

§. 58. Neverthelefs, if the mind appears to have taken a wrong turn, are there not juft grounds of apprehenfion? Moft affuredly. But this turn manifefts itfelf moft evidently in the prevalence of evil habits, and attachment to prefent pleafures, without regard to the confequences; therefore those who ftand in greateft danger, are leaft apt to take the alarm, and whoever could raife it in them, would do them an ineftimable kindnefs. On the contrary, fuch in whom difquietudes abound, have upon

upon that very account the lefs reafon to entertain them; for an earneft concern for the future being the first and principal spring provided for bringing men into the right way, where this appears strongly, it is of itself alone an evidence that provision has been made in their favour.

But despondencies of this kind are often owing to the indifcretion of teachers, who infift too ftrenuoufly upon higher perfections of virtue than human nature can attain, and are found to prevail most upon women, or perfons of fmall ability, and in their contemplative hours rather than feafons of action. For the confolation of fuch perfons therefore let it be observed, that righteoufnels does not confift in the quantity of good we do, but in our doing fo much, be it little, or be it much, as lies in our power. There are pegs and pins in a building as well as beams and columns, nor can we doubt that God distributes to every man the talents fuited to the task he is to perform; therefore if we attend only to family affairs, or making broths

broths for the fick, provided this be all we had ability to do, we have compleated our part.

Let it next be remarked, that our imagination does not lie under our abfolute command to raife ideas there, in what ftrength and vividnefs of colour we pleafe: the Poet cannot always fill himfelf with infpiration, nor the Philofopher with his clear difcernment of abftracted truth, nor the religious man with his ardors and tranfports: therefore the want of a fervent faith ^a and glowing zeal is not fo much the mark of reprobation, as of a prefent indifpofition of the organs.

^a If any man fhall difquiet himfelf for that he can never rife at all to this fervent faith, let him confider that the capacity of entertaining a flrong perfuafion, is one of the talents given for carrying us through good works, and God diftributes it to men in proportion to the tafks they have to perform. To thofe whom he calls to perfecution, or arduous trials, he will afford a larger measure; but let such as have little to do, content themfelves with what suffices for their purpofe. Strength of mind is no otherwife in our power than ability of body: we may improve either by exercise, or management, but can never extend them beyond the

·Let

Predestination.

Let it further be remembered, that notwithflanding what may have been inculcated of a conftant attention to the duties of religion, our bufinefs lies chiefly in action, and the common duties of life: fo that when perplexities overcloud us, inflead of foreboding melancholy omens from the gloom they caft, we fhould rather take them as admonitions, that it is not now the feafon to puzzle our brains with thinking, but to beftir ourfelves in fome active employment, or purfue fome innocent recreation, which may fupply us with a flow

the bounds our natural conffitution has prefcribed to us. Our common labourers acquire a much greater robuftnefs than others of the fame make, brought up to an indolent or fedentary life; but no affiduity in labour can bring a flender loofe-built man to tofs the weaver's beam of *Goliah*, or carry the gates of *Gaza*. It may be obferved further, that our vigour, both of mind and body, grows with our growth, and abates upon our beginning to decay; therefore old women and children, plied injudicioufly with good books, are most liable to the difquietudes we have been speaking of. The one may be taught to expect greater lengths than they can yet attain : and the other not to charge it upon themfelves as a fault, that they grow feeble and poor in fpirit.

251

Predestination.

of fpirits for reafon to work with to better purpole afterwards.

For if fear and trembling be a duty, a becoming confidence and juft repofe in the divine Goodnefs is a duty likewife, nor is fortitude lefs a virtue than prudence, and the proper province of both is afcertained by their ufefulnefs^b. Therefore when anxieties arife, it behoves us to confider what purpofe they may anfwer, while they ferve to keep us vigilant, and fpur on our activity in helping ourfelves, we do well to encourage them; but when they tend to no good, nor urge us to any thing we

^b This fhows the benefit of trying our principles of action by their reference to ufe: for the concern for futurity is one of the moral fenfes, apt like the others to grow luxuriant, and run into extremes; but what is an extreme can be determined only by examining whether the giving way to it would do more hurt than good. A man is never the nearer heaven for being confident that he fhall get there, nor ever the farther from it merely for his apprehenfions that he fhall not find an entrance. Therefore the former would be the more eligible perfuafion, were it not likely to make us remifs and carelefs in our journey; and the latter is recommendable no further than as it fpurs us to activity and vigilance.

fhould

Predestination.

fhould not have done as well without them, we cannot do better than to turn our face from them, and use any expedient at hand to banish them out of our thoughts.

But Predefination, though formerly making much noife in the world, is now grown an unfashionable topic °, nor am I forry that it is fo, for though I think it might be fo explained as to render it neither formidable nor subversive of diligence, yet I fear such explanation would not stick with common apprehensions, but they would still annex to it an idea of Fatality, which must unavoidably nourish despon-

• Nor would ever have come into fathion had it not been for the arts of defigning perfons, who claim a power of conferring it: for by perfuading mankind that their final happinefs depends upon holding the precife form of doctrine taught by themfelves, they infenfibly infufe a notion of their having a privilege to admit whom they pleafe into the number of the Elect, or at leaft to declare who is one of that number; and impofe fuch terms upon the admiffion as they think moft for their own advantage. But were Predeftination really abfolute, no fubfequent conduct could turn it afide; nor would it be of more confequence what a man believes, or whom he follows, than how he lives, or what he practifes.

......

253

dencies in phlegmatic tempers, prefumption, and fatal fecurity in the fanguine.

Conclufion.

۱-

254

§. 59. I have now rummaged every corner of the wildernefs, and left no thicket untried that I could think of: it has been my endeavour to open the paffages as I went along, and difentangle the boughs where they had matted themfelves together, or been interlaced by perfons of an unlucky fhrewdnefs in perplexing; fo that the traveller may never be drove against the thorns without finding an opening to escape them, nor bewildered in mazes, without feeling a clue to direct him.

Yet I do not pretend fo to have cleared the way, as that he may run carelefsly along, for the boughs will ftill overhang, the paths remain dark, rugged, and intricate, and the clue put into his hands be apt to flip away from him; therefore he must not proceed in a hurry, but take every step warily and circumspectly, putting the twigs as fide that they may not strike against his eyes, nor intercept his view of

the

the ground as he goes along, and keeping good hold of his feveral clues while neceffary for his guidance.

If I have not done my work compleatly to the fatisfaction of every body, allowance may be made for the difficulty of the fubject, which has foiled fo many men of deep thought and learning, that fhould any thing be found here to render it clearer, I should rather look upon it as a lucky hit, than any claim to extraordinary merit. For I have not pretended to manage the fame train of argument better than other people, but have proceeded in a method of my own, which if purfued imperfectly, may ftill ferve as a hint, that others may improve upon to greater advantage. I have at least to my own content effected a perfect reconcilement between Freewill and Univerfal Providence, and if this could be done to the general content, it would be no fmall fervice to the ferious part of mankind; for neither of these points can easily be given up, nor has it hitherto been found eafy

256

eafy to show them confistent with one another.

For our reason affords us fo many grounds of affurance, that affairs as well in the moral as natural world, are adminiftered by the power and wifdom of God, and yet fo many important events, fuch as. the rife and fall of empires, the lives and deaths, the fortunes and diftreffes of men, depend upon their behaviour among one another, that we cannot but be perfuaded he governs the thoughts and actions of mankind with as full and abfolute a dominion as he does the courfes of nature. On the other hand, daily experience bears witnefs that our motions lie under our own controul, and we can do this thing or that as we pleafe, without any force constraining, or dominion compelling us to the contrary. Then upon comparing these two confiderations together, while they appear to clash, we are tempted to diftrust either our reafon or our experience; and according to which part we take, either are thrown offour difcretion and tenour of conduct by the

the imagination of a fecret influence and compulsion hanging over us, or lofe our dependance upon Providence, that truest folace of our minds in time of danger and distress, and furest direction of our conduct in feasons of ease and prosperity.

Whereas were the inconfistency taken off, we might then allow both human agency and divine government their full extent, because they might co-operate in the fame work without interfering with each other: we should see no discouragement against making observations upon the things about us relative to our conduct, and taking our measures accordingly with freedom, and a decent confidence in their fuccefs, and we fhould depend contentedly upon the guidance of Providence for turning the courses of fortune and actions of perfons with whom we have any concern, fo as to procure all the good intended to be bestowed upon us.

Nay further, when we confider that things visible and invisible, lie under the dominion of one governour, connecting S all 257

all in one wifely regulated polity, wherein nothing is established in vain, and reflect how much of our time is loft in fleep and infancy, how many pains, difeafes and troubles fall upon us, how many unavailing hours pass over our heads, and how often we are forced to beftir ourfelves to very little purpose of our own, there is a probable prefumption that all these things turn fome how or other to the account of other beings. So that our little concerns and transactions may be of greater importance than we imagine, and ourfelves made unknowingly to work out the advantage of fellow-creatures, whereof we have not the least knowledge, nor even suspicion. Nor need we want hopes from the goodness of God, that we shall one day reap the benefit of those fervices wherein we have been made, tho' undefignedly, inftrumental *.

^a I have already let the Reader into fome of my good Coufin's fancies, which may be reckoned the luxuriancies of a warm imagination and contemplative turn: nor are fuch peculiar to him, but may be found among the ancient Philofophers, primitive Fathers, and modern Divines. In my third note on §. 20. I have hinted

But

259

But how fimple and confined, or how extensive and complicated schemes soever we

hinted his notion, That all fpace not occupied by body, may be replete with spiritual substance; and that there may be other worlds created befides this we inhabit. When he talks of other worlds, he has not fo much in his thoughts the supposition of earths and heavens beyond the flarry sphere (though this too he does not deny) as other fystems of creatures intermingled among our own; governed by diffinct laws, yet ordered in fuch wildom and contrivance, as not to difturb or interfere with those wherein we have concern.

My friend has fome phlegin to temper his fire, which witholds him from catching at every plaufible speculation carrying no appearance of benefit, but does not hinder him from embracing, perhaps too eagerly, whatever he conceives tending to difplay the divine Excellence, or raife our idea of the power, the wildom, or the goodness of our Creator. Now it feems to him more glorious to those attributes, that there should be no defolate fpot in the empire of God incapable of receiving his bounty, no ftroke in his plan fuperfluous, nor work of his hand unproductive of ules proportionable to the largeness of the design ; than that this immense fabric of the visible universe should be conftructed only for the benefit of a few reptiles crawling about this infignificant globe; the greater part of whom have not even the benefit of contemplating the wonders it contains. Some perhaps may alledge, that profusences gives the greater display of magnificence, as flowing the inexhauftible riches of the divine power, fo that God can afford an immenfe coft for the better accommodation of creatures whom he defigns 10 260

Conclusion.

we may conceive contained within the divine plan, the flumbling block of compulfion

to favour. But let us confider why we efteem profufion a mark of magnificence in man; namely, becaufe of his ignorance of the exact wants, and feveral likings of the perfons he is to entertain; for could he know the precife measure of one, and particular objects of the other, he might give proof of his riches, by fhowing himfelf able to fupply every man with what he defires, without heaping fuperfluities upon the table. Were we invited to the house of a great perfonage, where we faw preparations larger than could poffibly contribute to our entertainment, fhould we not conclude that he had other guests to entertain besides ourselves ? and did we perceive meats cooked up in a manner unsuitable to an English palate, should we not suppose he expected a company of foreigners, or perfons whole palates were differently constituted from our own? By the fame reafon, when we behold mighty works in nature, which ferve us only for objects of contemplation, may we not conclude there are other inhabitants whom they ferve for more needful purpofes?

As to those called by Lucretius the faults of Nature, however fome righteous people may deny their being fuch, and infift that all things contribute in fome shape or other, nearly or remotely, to our uses: my neighbour does not fcruple to acknowledge there are faults, fuppofing man the fole object deferving regard.' For though it might be difficult to point out a Reformation in any particular which would not be attended with worfe inconveniencies, yet he thinks it too daring prefumption to affert, that infinite Wildom could not have

pulfion upon free Agency being removed, we may conclude that every purpole comprized

have contrived methods for avoiding those inconveniencies, and formed a world better fuited to the accommodation of human life, had that been the fole point in view. Therefore that this was not done, he looks upon as an evidence that there were other views to be provided for, and other creatures differently conftituted, for whose advantage these feeming faults were calculated. Nor yet will he controvert, that all things we have knowledge of were made for the fervice of man, provided it be not added for man alone; for he obferves, that nature ferves many purpofes by one and the fame provision. The air we breathe wafts the birds aloft, fuftains the vapours, and affifts in the growth of vegetables: the woods, from whence we draw materials for fhips, for houfes, for utenfils, for firing, afford fhelter and pannage to the cattle, habitation and food to the fowls, harbour and nourifhment to the infects. Why then fhould we imagine that multitude of immense bodies we fee twinkle by night, were hung out only as a spectacle for us to gaze at ? That the vast effusion of light was darted forth on all fides throughout the heavens, for the fake of a few rays to fall upon our eyes? That the boundlefs fields of Ether were fpread out with no other defign than for our little planets to roll in? To fay this, he apprehends lefs worthy the divine attributes, and lefs agreeable to his favourite principle, of nothing made in vain, than to fuppofe innumerable hofts of perceptive beings, for whofe conveniencies, and enjoyments, thefe ftupendous works were contrived.

He remarks further, that univerfal Nature being the work of one Creator, and dominion of one Governor, it

prized therein has adequate caufes provided for its execution, and every caufe in act.

it is no unreasonable presumption to suppose it formed upon one all comprehensive plan, nor that the laws respecting the different systems of beings, are to be regarded as municipal, contained under one general polity : fo that nothing ftands alone, nor unconnected with the reft; but as other things were fo far made for man as that regard was had to him in their establishment, fo man was made for the fervice of his fellow-creatures, visible and invisible, regard being had to them in the conftitutions of nature or fortune established for him, and his transactions, together with the incidents befalling him, being made productive of fome advantages to them. He feems to fee this notion confirmed by the conflitution of things upon this fublunary stage, wherein men and animals, plants and elements mutually affect one another; from whence it may be prefumed the like mutual affection prevails throughout the regions unfeen. And as the profusion of ftars, of light, and of ether, almost useles to us, give proof of other natures to whom they might be ufeful; fo the wafte of time, of thought, and labour, occafioned by fleep, by infirmities, error, and ignorance, which make large deductions from our enjoyment, must add as largely to it elfewhere.

He takes notice likewife, that nature forms her productions by long preparation, and through feveral fleps: the little feed grows and ripens gradually in the pod of the flower; when falling into the ground, it fhoots firft a bud, then a ftem, and laftly a full grown plant; and upon the flructure of the embrio feed depend the kind, the qualities, the fruits of the future tree. Why then may not there be a like progreffion

262

of

263

act, whether voluntary or neceffary agent, contributes its share towards the completion of some purpose. There-

of the foul through her feveral forms of being; each being preparatory to the next, not only as our good or evil conduct here determines our condition either way hereafter, but as our feveral ways of living upon this ftage may fit us to perform different parts upon another? We have paffed through but one preexistent state that we know of, I mean that of the womb, and upon what happened to us there, depends in great measure our ftrength, our vigour, our genius, and our talents : nor does there want probability that the fame in our future birth will depend upon what has happened to us during our prefent flate. For our fenfations pass through the mental organization in their way to the mind : if I look upon a houfe, I have an image of it in my fancy, as well as when I think of it with my eyes fhut; and this image is neceffary to my perceiving it, for were I to ftare ever fo much while thinking intenfely on fomething elfe, I might have no more perception of the house than if there flood none before me. But matter, however finely organized, can impress variety of Perceptions no otherwise than by being diverfly modified : whence it follows, that the action of our fenfes throws the mental organization into different modifications, and by doing this frequently, may bring the fibres of them into a different texture. Accordingly we find our habits, our turns of thought, our taftes, our feveral expertness in one way rather than another, formed in us by the objects wherewith we have been mostly conversant. So that every man's understanding and imagination become diverfly modelled according as he has been a foldier, a fcholar, a mechanic, or a labourer. Now my contemplative and ferious friend, effeeming it for the

Therefore the doctrine of universal Providence being, as it seems to me, well eftablished,

the glory of God to difcover new ufes in the feveral provifions of nature, thinks this a prefumptive evidence that the mind, or fpiritual part, carries off this mental organization upon her departure; and that the profeffions whereinto we are diverfly led, befides their ufes in human life, adapt us feverally for fome peculiar functions we are defined to perform in our next form of being.

Nor does he fcruple to imagine, that future punifhments, may be derived through the fame channel; human nature being fo ordered, that the practice of vicious courfes, by working improper mixtures into the organization, may render it diffurbed and diffempered, breeding the worm that dieth not, and the inward fire that is not quenched. For fince nature is the work of God, and all her provisions of his contrivance, whatever mifery fhall follow by natural confequence is as much the effect of divine vengeance, as what is inflicted by the miniftry of devils, or elementary flames.

When he reflects on the exiftence of evil, that myftery which the wit of man has never yet been able to unveil, he cannot allow any thing to exift neceffarily, nor unproduced by the creator; therefore fubfcribes to what he apprehends a fcripture doctrine, *That the Lord created evil as well as good.* Yet this work of the creation feeming repugnant to our ideas of infinite Goodnefs, he thinks we ought to extend it no further than experience and neceffity oblige us; which juftifies him in confining it to the embodied and inorganized flates: fo that when the fpirit can get totally difengaged from matter, it fhall become totally exempt

264

eftablished, I may go on without further fcruple to raife what fuperstructure I can .upon this foundation.

exempt from evil. This reduces the quantity of it within a very narrow compais, for bodies being extremely fpongy, the most folid of them, upon Newton's authority, containing more of pore than fubftance, he fuppofes that if all the matter within the folar fystem were compressed together, it would form a mass no bigger than the body of the fun. Therefore if all fpace be replete with fpiritual fubftance, even admitting that fo much of it as lies immerfed in matter were conftantly miferable (which God be thanked is far from the fact) the evil would bear no greater proportion to the good than the magnitude of that body to the whole fystem around it. So that it would be no extravagant figure to cry out with David, Behold how high the heaven is in comparison of the earth, so great is the mercy of the Lord towards them that fear him ! Now to compute that proportion, reckoning the fun's diameter at 1200,000 miles, which the light, according to its volocity fettled by Newton, would run over in feven feconds; and taking Huygen's effimation of the distance of the nearest fixed star, which would require fix lunar months for light to travel through : the fun's magnitude will be to that of his whole fyftem, or the proportion of evil to good, as one to the cube of fo many times feven feconds as are contained in the fix months, that is, 8916100448256000000, almost nine millions of millions of millions,

Then being perfuaded that God never terminates his purpofe upon evil, nor fends it unlefs for fome greater good to be brought out of it; he proceeds to examine in what manner it may be productive of good. T

In

265

In order to this he confiders the nature of the mind, which never moves to action unless for avoidance of fome uneafinefs, or upon prospect of some fatisfaction that would be loft without her endeavours to procure it : therefore a being possefied of happines, and in full fecurity that nothing could difturb or abate it, would remain in perpetual indolence, having no inducement to exert it's activity. But the apprehension of evil fuffices to move the mind without its actually falling upon her, yet we cannot well conceive fuch Apprehenfion without actual fuffering fomewhere or other, and a very little will do for the purpofe; for one man's misfortune may give warning to a million, vet we fhould never have an apprehension of bruifes or broken bones, or other misfortunes, if they were. never to happen at all; and perhaps a man who had never felt or feen any hurt, would wonder what you meant by admonishing him to guard against it. Therefore fome degree of actual fuffering may be neceffary to keep activity alive in the fpiritual fubftances for avoiding the fources of it. He thinks this the beft account that can be given for the origin of evil: and this affords a reason why the heavenly bodies, together with the planetary fyftems probably furrounding them, were difperfed up and down to fuch immeasurable distances, and the fields of ether stretched throughout the vaft expanse containing them; to wit, that the former might ferve as a habitation for animals, and the latter as a range for difembodied organizations; fo that famples of actual fuffering might not be wanted in any part of the univerfe.

Thus all nature ftands reciprocally connected : the purely fpiritual part having concern with the embodied, as exhibiting fpecimens of evil neceflary to preferve them in happinefs. And we having concern with

whatever fecures the happiness of those beings, among whom we hope one day to be incorporated.

These speculations, which he thinks helpful to open our minds, to give us a fuller idea of the divine bounty, magnificence, and polity, and a better opinion of that universal nature under whose laws we live, yet being of too thin and airy a nature to fink deep in the imagination ; he has employed the hypothefes of vehicles, and a mundane foul, to render them more fenfible and more eafily retainable. For when a probable manner can be devifed to fhew how things may be effected, it gains them a readier reception than bare arguments to prove their reality. Nor are they new inventions of his own making: for many learned men have fuppofed an inner tunicle adhering to the mind upon her feparation from the body; the antients painted the Soul, or Pfyche, with butterflies wings, to denote her refemblance with a butterfly coming forth from the chryfalis in a body before formed therein; and St. Paul likens the fpiritual body of refurgents to the blade fpringing from wheat, or barley, or it may be fome other grain, which Naturalists tell us is no more than an expansion of the little germ contained in the feed. Nor can it be denied, that many of the old Philosophers held a mundane soul, or soul of the world, which though now commonly underftood of the fupreme Being, whoever examines their remains, will find they meant by it only a created fubstance, whereinto the fouls of men and animals were abforbed.

Thefe hypothefes effectually banifh the notion of ghofts, apparitions, witchcraft, and the like. For the vehicles, although there be fome unlucky malicious creatures among them, yet are too fmall and feeble to do us any mifchief, or give motion to particles of matter enough to ftrike any of our fenfes. And the mundane

mundane foul, although abundantly able to practife the art magic, and raife ftorms or earthquakes fufficient to beat our houfes about our ears; yet is of too important a character to play tricks with us, and too great a lover of regularity ever to difturb the order of nature, or work any thing fupernatural without an express direction from above.

Now fhould any body afk what use all these speculations are of, let him declare what he understands by use; if he means, for directing our measures in the common concerns of life, my honeft Coufin readily acknowledges they are of none; therefore he would have them referved for our closets, nor ever fuffered to intrude upon our thoughts when we go about our ordinary transactions. But fo neither are the articles of religion of any use upon these occasions : for who ever takes his measures in letting a farm, or buying a houfe, or ordering provisions for his family, from his opinion concerning the formation of the world, or a future state? Were I atheist or devotee, I should probably buy my wares at the fame fhop, and employ the fame carpenter to mend the paling of my yard. Therefore let fuch as refolve to confine themfelves to the daily bufinefs of their flation, or to those courses of acting and thinking which cuftom has made current in the world, or who do not find these subjects fuited to their tafte, pass them over unheeded : yet they need not despife them for all that, until certain they can fuit the tafte, or uses, of nobody elfe. And if there be any who fhall find my Author, or myfelf, have contributed the least towards enlarging or clearing his ideas, or improving his Theory of Providence, he is heartily welcome; nor shall either of us think the time we have fpent for his ferve ill beftowed.

FINIS.

268

MAN in quest of HIMSELF:

OR, A

DEFENCE

OFJHE

INDIVIDUALITY

OF THE

HUMAN MIND, or SELF.

Occafioned by

Some REMARKS in the Monthly Review for July 1763. on a Note in Search's Freewill.

By CUTHBERT COMMENT, Gent.

They imagine Compounds to be fomewhat really different from that of which they are compounded; which is a very great miftake.

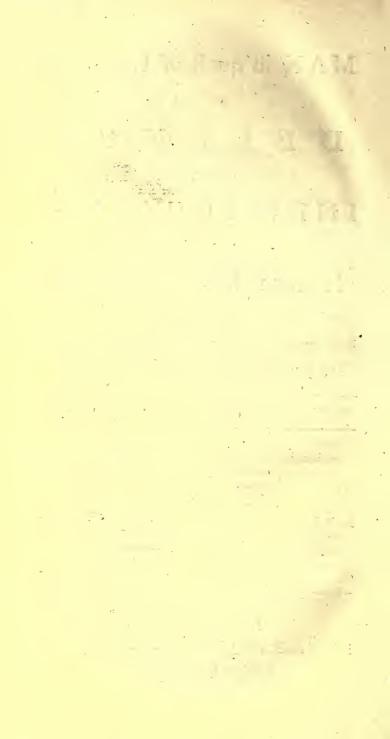
Clarke, Attrib. 6th Edit. 1725. page 53.

Endlefly feparable parts are as really diffinct Beings, notwithftanding their contiguity, as if they had been at never fo great a diffance from one another.

Ibid. p. 89.

LONDON:

Printed for R. and J. DODSLEY in *Pall-Mall.* 1763. [Price One Shilling.]





MAN in quest of Himself.

T is an old obfervation, that nothing is more difficult for a Man to know than himfelf; infomuch that this fcience was thought unattainable without fupernatural affiftance; for

From Heaven's high dome descended, KNOW THYSELF.

But then this was underftood to refpect the knowledge of a Man's character, fentiments, and real motives of action; nor was it ever efteemed difficult to know his own perfon from that of another, or from his cloaths, his hair, or any thing elfe belonging to him. Whereas a difficulty has been lately flarted in afcertaining what is properly *the Man*, or to what the pronoun *I* ought to be applied.

The laft *Monthly Review* for July 1763. has made honourable mention of my Coufin and A 2 myfelf, myfelf, and has interfperfed therein fome criticifms, by way of admonition for our conduct: He may fee they are not loft upon us; for we have profited by them already in our title-page. We had proceeded before upon Horace's antiquated rule, being studious rather of producing fire out of fmoke, than fmoke out of a flash; never reflecting, that fince the invention of gunpowder it is manifest-the gun can never do execution if the pan do not flash. So to pleafe him, I have put a little more powder into the pan this time of charging: and we hope he perceives by the look of the flash, that our fhot is not levelled against him, but against an opinion he has advanced. For these two are very different marks : people may differ in fentiment upon a fpeculative point, and ftill be very good friends. And indeed he has faid fo many obliging things of us, far beyond our most fanguine expectation, that it would be the height of imprudence to put him out of humour with us, or attempt to leffen his character: we rather wish his authority may be fo great with the public, as that they may give their voices upon us according to his fumming. up the evidence; we shall be perfectly fatisfied with the verdict.

Yet

Yet we shall observe in passing, that besides his admonitions, he has been careful to instruct us by his example too; for, though he has allowed my Author to have acquitted himfelf with politenefs, yet it feems this was not a politeness of the right fashionable colour, admired in our great Metropolis and the adjacent Borough; therefore he has fet us a pattern of the true genuine fort in the following expreffions: Greatly deficient in physiological knowledge ;- Very confiderable blunders ;- Thefe very accurate philologists ;- Indeed, friend, you have here overlooked yourself; - It is with equal impropriety they talk .--- Now, we must needs acknowledge these strains in the highest pitch of modern perfection, becaufe the like abound in the North Briton and Cave of Famine, those celebrated performances, which every trueborn Englishman doats upon. But we are much afraid whether we shall be able to copy . after his example; for it is commonly obferved, that nobody ever fucceeds in a thing he does not give his mind to; but it happens unluckily that we find in ourfelves no inclination to attain this modern genteelnefs: our ambition prompts us rather to the Ridiculum than the Acre, and we should be proud if we could acquire a spark of that old-fashion-

ed

[6]

ed politeness described by *Persus* in one of his predecessors :

When Horace every foible touch'd with art, His smiling friend receiv'd him to his heart, Pleas'd with the tickling probe, nor felt it Smart.

The tefty people too could patient stand, While wip'd their follies by his skilful hand.

I don't know why he fhould take fuch diftafte at my button, unlefs perhaps that he faw his own face in one part of it; and might be a little chagrined to find, that I had not better maintained the dignity of the noble branch of the *Comments*:

However, I have the pleafure to fee this little difappointment has not overcome his affection to a relation; for he has fpoken of me in a very handfome manner, well becoming one *Comment* of another: and with refpect to my Author, whom he will eafily believe I muft love as well as I do myfelf, he has proceeded with remarkable tendernefs. For it being abfolutely neceffary to find fault fomewhere, becaufe the Public, proceeding for once upon a very right principle, That there can be no perfon nor performance in this world compleatly perfect, would not think him well qualified qualified for his office of Critic-General, if he did not find fomething to blame in every piece he took in hand; he has kindly fpared the main work, and fallen upon one of my Notes, containing a matter no ways affecting the argument carried on in the text.

But notwithstanding his good intention, fo it happens, that he has done us more mischief than we flatter ourfelves he defigned. For the Individuality of the Mind was a principle Mr. Search had depended upon to prove its unperifhablenefs; which gave an opening to his enquiries concerning the other world. Becaufe his plan having confined him to build folely upon the fund of natural reason, he was not entitled to avail himfelf of the affurances given in the Gofpel : but while it remained uncertain whether our continuance was to last any longer than this life, there was very little encouragement to confider whether there were another world or no : on the other hand, if it could be shown from contemplation of our Nature, that the Mind is built to last for ever, then it would become expedient to examine what is likely to befal her hereafter, and whether any thing to be done at prefent may affect her future condition.

Therefore

Therefore my coufin exhorted me to endeavour fettling what is a Man's Self, and whether it may have continuance after diffolution of the human frame: not in contradiction to Mr. *Monthly*, with whom we have no quarrel, but in defence of an article we conceive material, againft whoever shall attack it, or as a further explanation to such as may not have fully comprehended our meaning.

But we muft crave leave to make our defence in our own way: and as *Horace* obferves that every animal places his dependence upon the arms Nature has furnifhed him with, the Wolf never defends himfelf with his heels, nor the Bull with his teeth: fo we, who it feems are excellent Philologifts, though greatly deficient in phyfiological knowledge, and for this reafon do not clearly comprehend what is to be underftood by phyfical and metaphyfical exiftence, palpable and impalpable individuals, material and immaterial fubftance, as handled by our opponent, may be allowed to avail ourfelves of that part where our greateft ftrength lies.

Therefore, under the guidance of our Patronefs, who has helped us fo well hitherto, we fhall obferve that *Same* is an equivocal term. If, upon giving me a glafs of wine, I fhould . fhould think it tafted different from that you gave me half an hour before, and you affure me it is the fame wine, becaufe you poured it out of the very fame bottle, I should rest fatisfied with the anfwer. But if a conjurer should pretend to take out a glass of wine unmingled that I had thrown into water, and upon his producing a glass of pure wine I doubted whether it were the fame, if he fhould tell me, Yes, for he poured it out of the fame bottle, I should think he trifled with me.

In like manner it may be faid, that rich and poor are all the fame flesh and blood, or that every flick of elder contains the fame pithy substance. Yet whoever fays this does not imagine, that my cookmaid and I have but one body, or the fame mafs of blood between us: nor that one flick of elder contains the fame fubstance as twenty.

From hence we may fee there are two forts of identity; one wherein things are the fame in appearance and quality, and this we may call fpecific : nevertheless they still remain numerically diftinct; as this egg is not the fame with that, how much foever it may be the fame to the eye, or for any uses we may have of it. Thus

B

Thus fubftances, as numerically diftinguifhed, never fluctuate nor change into one another; their fluctuation is only of form or pofition upon their entering into compositions of fubftances specifically different. The fame particles which were mould last year, might afterwards have become grass, then mutton, then human flesh, lastly, a flea or a maggot, and continue the fame throughout all their feveral migrations: fo that what is maggot now, may have been part of a man,' or a scheep, or a blade of grass, or a clod of dirt.

Therefore if we confider man as the whole composition of flesh, blood, bones, and humours, it is plain he fluctuates and changes continually: for if he be kept without victuals, his substance wastes away, and is renewed again by proper nourishment: so that how long soever he may continue the same species of creature, he does not continue the same substance in all its parts a week nor a day. Nor was the Mr. *Monthly* who dealt so favourably with us in *July*, the same with him that treated a friend of ours with the like benignity in 1755.

I have met with fome who fay they have no idea of fubftance, becaufe they cannot conceive one devoid of all quality whatever; but

but this is not the right way of going to work for conceiving it. For there are fome things we cannot apprehend exifting by themfelves, tho' we may eafily in conjunction with others : a father cannot be without a child ; there cannot be colour without figure, nor figure without magnitude; yet the ideas of father and fon, of colour, figure and magnitude, are clearly diftinct. Nor, if we confider the matter fairly, is it more eafy to apprehend quality by itfelf than fubstance. For can there be fquareness without fomething square, or rednefs without any thing red? Or can there be a fquare or a red nothing, any more than a substance without quality? But squareness and rednefs are only perceptions of the mind ? What then ? Should we fuppose with Berkeley, (they are not effects of the external caufes we ascribe them to, then are there no qualities without us any more than there are fubftances : but if there be real qualities producing the perceptions, then is there a real fomething posseffing the qualities. 'Tis true we may be fometimes deceived by appearances of things that are not real, as when a man fees apparitions: but tho' there be no fubstance ftanding before him in the place where he apprehends it to be, yet there is a real fubftance fome-

B 2

[II]

fomewhere, either in the eye, or the humours, or the brain, caufing the appearance. Even in the most retired thoughts of the mind, whether we imagine her to raife those thoughts by her own immediate operation, then is she a substance possessing the quality of impressing them; or whether she uses some organ of our internal material frame, as an instrument to impress them by, then is the modification of that organ the object we difcern.

But the ftrongeft idea of fubftance we may have from ourfelves, the knowledge whereof is more certain than that of qualities. For how know we the qualities are real, unlefs becaufe we really perceive them? And if we are nothing real ourfelves, they cannot be really perceived by us: for it is the hardeft thing of all to conceive how any thing unreal can really do or be really affected by any thing. And this fubftance retains its exiftence when exerting no quality, as in found fleep.

Qualities continually change: a fquare piece of clay may be moulded into a round, warm water may grow cold: but in all these changes fomething still remains the fame, and that can be none other than the substance: When a 2 quality quality goes off, it is fucceeded by another, as fquarenefs in the clay by fome other figure, and warmth in the water by coolnefs; nor does the fubftance ever want a quality to inveft it: but the quality upon being altered does not fly off to fome other fubftance, but is abfolutely loft; and may be regained without being drawn from any other fund.

We come next to the term Individual; and what does that import but fomething that cannot be divided ? therefore to talk of every Individual being a compound, is a palpable abfurdity, a flat contradiction, the fame as an indivisible divisible, or an uncompounded compound .- Perhaps here our Mafter will think us hopeful lads, beginning to come forward in the modern politenefs: but we cannot arrogate so much merit yet; for we do not charge it upon him as a blunder or impropriety; and for this very good reafon; becaufe we could not do fo without hitting ourfelves a flap on the face. There were three young fellows once went to fee a fine garden : one of them fpying another pluck a peach, whifpered the third, Pray is it right to take a Gentleman's fruit without leave? Yes, fays he, it must certainly be right; becaufe I have a couple in my pocket. So contradi-

[14]

tradictions must fometimes be proper, because Mr. Search uses one in Page 12, where he fays, "a man may have power when he has "it not." But then we see how he brings himself off by adding, "That is, he may "have it in one fense while he wants it in "another." Now if we take the same method for folving the other contradiction, perhaps we shall find it throw some light upon the argument in hand.

Naturalifts (I beg pardon, I mean Phyfiologifts) diftribute the productions of Nature into kinds, as animals, vegetables, foffils; which they fubdivide into Species, as Men, horfes, fheep, &c. Several further divifions are occafionally made under thefe, as French, Englifh, men grown, children, and the like. But you cannot go lower than the fingle bodies of each clafs, whofe parts are joined together, not to be feparated without lofing their fpecific denomination, nor do we ever fee them reunited after feparation. Therefore we call them *Individuals*, becaufe to us they appear fuch, and may be efteemed fuch for any ufes we have of them.

Yet this manner of diffribution admits of feveral exceptions : in fome fpecies there are no individuals, fuch as Fire, Water, Oil ; becaufe caufe in all divisions of them discernible by our fenses, they still retain their specific qualities. Some individuals may be multiplied into many; an ofier may be cut into twenty twigs, each whereof is a diftinct plant of the fame kind. Animals and vegetables receive their fubstance from parents of their kind, which fubstance nevertheless loses its species during the paffage, and refumes it again afterwards: an egg is never numbered in species with the bird that laid it; but when hatched into a chicken, it ranks as one among the poultry. Both fpecies and individuals are often made by art: .Punch, Beer, and Mead are different kinds of liquor; and when a man takes an inventory of his houshold goods, he can diffinguish those of the fame fort only by individuals; or if he draws off a pipe of wine, he must drive in a cork to preferve each individual bottle from growing vapid. Thus we fee that both in phyfiological and artificial eftimation, Individual is an arbitrary term, applied to things for our convenience.

With regard to those species that have individuals, the term Existence or Being must belong to them. A Man, being I suppose a palpable Individual, will be allowed to have an Existence or Being of his own, distinct from from all other men. So you will fay the whole race of men has a Being and existence of its own, diffinct from all other creatures. Very true: but not diffinct from the men composing it; nor has it another Being to be added to the number of theirs. The fame. will hold good of any leffer collection of men; as a Regiment, which has not an additional Being over and above that of the men, nor exists otherwise than by their existence, which nevertheless they have independent on one another. For if Serjeant Bluff were annihilated, Corporal Trim might still continue the fame Man he was: but if all the Men were annihilated, what would become of the regiment?

Neverthelefs it is manifest that all these individuals, as our Corrector justly and properly expresses it, are compounds, confisting of parts substantially and numerically diffinct from each other: so that the palpable substance, *Man*, is a collection of many substances, as the Regiment was; and has existence no otherwife than that; to wit, by the existence of his parts. Were his hands annihilated, his feet might remain the fame Beings they were before, as *Trim* might upon the destruction

of

[17]

of Bluff; but were all his parts annihilated, the Man must utterly lose his Being.

Well, but his hands and feet are compounds too, made up of the elements : therefore they have no other existence than what belongs to the elements composing them. But what fhall we fay to these elements? for being a meer ignoramus in phyfiological knowledge, I proteft I don't know what to make of them. I think I can feel earth, water, air, and fire, if they touch me in quantities enough to affect my fenfes; therefore they flould be palpable. But we are told at first they are impalpable exiftencies; and yet I am not fure of that neither; for it is faid afterwards, that if they fluctuate and change into one another, they are no existencies at all, being devoid not only of palpable, but of abfolute and metaphyfical exiftence, which belongs to nothing befides God alone.

I shall not deny it possible the elements may change into one another, but then this is a fluctuation of form, or of effence, which seems all along to have been mistaken for existence, not of substance : for it is impossible to conceive any particular substance should ever change into another substance, whether similar or of different kind. An egg, by putre-C faction faction and vegetation, may in process of time become an apple; but this egg can never become that egg, nor that apple; nor can either egg or apple ever lose their numerical existance, whatever various forms they pass thro', or new effences they take. So if what now is earth once was water, still it is the fame fubstance diversity modified: nor can this drop of water ever be turned into that drop, or that speck of dirt, by any fluctuation whatever.

But if the elements may change, it must be by a various disposition of their parts; therefore they have parts: and I suppose it is understood, tho' not expressed, that these parts have under parts, and so on for ever. Which *fubintelligitur* is necessary to prove the nonexistence of elements: for fince they be compounds, having no other existence than that of their parts, nor these than of the under parts composing them, we cannot make them a title to existence, until we come to absolute Individuals without any parts at all, which it is suggested, are no-where to be found.

Before this was urged against us, it should have been remembered what antagonists we were contending with, namely, the Stratonic and Democritic Atheists, who would not have pressed

preffed us fo clofely : for they admitted Atoms abfolutely indivisible, whereout the fouls of men, and all other productions were formed ; and held, that these Atoms were floating about in infinite space, distinct and separate from each other, until by their collifions, affortments, and adhefions, they ranged themfelves into the compound bodies we fee. Upon this hypothefis, it is plain there was the fame number of fubstances from all eternity there is now; and upon their cluftering together, whether by chance or neceffity, nothing new, unlefs in kind and quality, or effence, not in substance, could be produced. Therefore the fouls of Men could have no distinct existence of their own, nor other than that of the Atoms composing them : and upon their diffolution, not a fingle Being would be loft; any more than the King would lofe a fubject, that is, a palpable fubstance, upon difbanding a regiment .- Neverthelefs thefe Atoms were a fufficient foundation for 'the existence of what they composed, their substance being that of the compounds whereinto they entered. So that our argument, however defective in proving our point to other people, may still remain good ad hominem, upon the occafion whereto we applied it.

C 2

Yet

Yet we need not want the like foundation without availing ourfelves of the Atheift's conceffion : for after all poffible division of Matter, it will continue Matter still; nor can you reduce it to nothing by any feparation of parts whatever; whence it follows, that there are particles which never were, nor ever will be fmaller than they are. These then may fairly be ftiled Atoms actually, if not potentially, indivifible. Nor is this repugnant to the opinion now generally received among physiologifts, that all Matter is homogeneous; all compound bodies being made up of a Materia prima, which is every where one and the fame in kind and quality, their various effences refulting from the various affortments whereinto it is caft.

20]

If it be faid the particles of *Materia prima*, muft have a right fide and a left, feparable, tho' perhaps never actually feparated from one another; this is more than we are warranted to affert. For the most confiderate perfons have forborn to pronounce peremptorily upon the divisibility of matter, any further than that it is indefinite, that is, no magnitude can be affigned than which we may be affured there cannot be a fmaller. But divisibility abfolutely infinite, has its difficulties as well as finite : for

for upon that hypothefis, half an apple muft contain as many parts as the whole; for the half containing infinite parts, nothing can be greater than infinite; yet the other half containing the like infinity, to fay that the addition of them does not encreafe the number in the whole, feems as abfurd as to deny that two and two make four. Since then we have not faculties to determine this point with certainty, the evidence before us of bodies existing, and of their having no further existence beyond that of their parts, is a ftronger proof that a ftop must be put to divisibility fomewhere, tho' we cannot tell where, than our want of conception of a particle without fides is of the contrary. For neither our fenses nor imagination can go beyond a certain degree of minutenefs; how then do we know what we might fee or apprehend, were they acute enough to difcern or comprehend objects below that degree.

However this be, it can fcarce be doubted that the matter, or first principle of bodies, has an existence of some fort or other, whether original or derivative, 'tis no matter; and that whatever higher compositions are formed thereout, exist only in the existence of that; because if the matter of any body were annihilated. hilated, the existence of that being withdrawn, the body would be no more. Just as a Regiment exists only by the existence of the men, of whatever kind it be belonging to them, and upon their annihilation could exist no more.

But it is alledged, that a Regiment has no Being. Why? Becaufe all compounds, according to us, have no existence at all. Pray. when did we ever fay fo? Did you never hear of the Welfhman, who riding with a heavy portmanteau before him, and perceiving his horfe tire, took up the portmanteau upon his own fhoulders to eafe the beaft ? never confidering that while the horfe carried him that bore the burthen, he carried that too: and if there had been twenty men hoifted upon one another, fo long as the uppermoft had the portmanteau upon his shoulders, the horse would have carried the fame weight as if it had lain. upon his own back. So while the component parts of bodies exist, their existence runs thro' the compositions whereinto they enter ; and palpable Individuals, together with whatever Companies, Regiments, Corporations, orother Compounds can be formed of them, have as much existence as their primary principles, - becaufe they have the very fame.' ThereTherefore we never denied a Regiment to have existence or Being; but only that it was a Being in the fingular number, diffinct from that of the men, and to be added to them.

We conceived it to be like a noun of number, as a Grofs, a Score, a Dozen, which, tho' *entia rationis* in themfelves, yet have a real exiftence when applied to particular fubftances. For a dozen of counters exift as really as a fingle one; if you put the dozen into your pocket, you put in real fubftance, not a fhadow or meer imagination; yet you have not thirteen things there, to wit, twelve counters and the dozen over and above.

You fay, if a regiment is no Being, neither is man a Being; and this you charge upon us as an egregious overfight. Fut upon what principles does the confequence follow? Why, upon those of the Atheists we were combating; and was fo far from being an overfight, that the main stress of our argument lay in driving our Antagonists to the absurd conclusion of making man to have no Being, no diftinct existence peculiar to himfelf; nor any thing more than a regiment of atoms, admirably well marshalled and difciplined indeed, but substantially and numerically the fame they were before enlisting. Upon

Upon our own principles the conclusion runs the other way : for we argue, that Man must be an Individual, not like your palpable Individuals, confifting of parts, becaufe he has a Being of his own. And for the truth of our posiulatum, we appeal to every man, Whether he can doubt of his own existence, or that he has a perfonality diftinct from that of all other Beings.

Nevertheless this appeal, it seems, cannot avail us; becaufe, how could any man acquire this fenfe or knowledge of his perfonality without a human body? or in other words, how can a man exist without a body? Had we faid the mind or foul of man might fo exist, it would have been lefs exceptionable; and yet exceptionable it would have been; for how could the mind acquire a fense of personality without a body? Now if it be remembered what was the opinion we fet out to battle against in the beginning of my note, namely, that the fouls of men, as well as all other productions, were formed out of atoms, the correction of Man into Mind might have been spared. For when afterwards we fpoke of the atoms rune ning together to compose a human body, we thought that, upon the principles of our adversaries, Mind and Body must be the same thing:

thing: but if any one thinks otherwife, he is welcome to dele Body, and read Mind, Soul or Spirit; our argument will run never the worfe.

[25]

As to the queftion, whether a Man or a Mind can acquire a fenfe of perfonality without a human body; we apprehend it as difficult for any body to answer in the negative, as for us in the affirmative. It may be faid indeed, as is faid of Mr. Locke, that the negative may be very eafily proved on our own principles: certainly nothing is more eafy than to affert this, and it may pass with such Readers as will take politiveness for demonstration : but it may not be quite fo eafy to make out the affertion.

But fuppofing it certain there can be no knowledge of perfonality without a body, how does it follow that no perfonality or existence can be had without one? or that not having knowledge of existence, and not existing, are fynonimous expressions? This is new doctrine to us, and the logic by which it is proved, rifes far above our pitch. It puts us in mind of that used in our infancy under the dictates of pure nature, unperverted by education, when the child hides its face in Mamma's apron, and then cries, Nobody fees D 1110. me. Which, in the learned language of our Cenfor, would run thus, " In this fituation I " can acquire no fenfe or knowledge of any " body's feeing me; therefore, or in other " words, nobody does fee me." Now in our humble apprehenfion, the reality of a fact is not the fame thing with the evidence of it: the one may be true, tho' the other be wanting. If we have evidence of a thing's exifting, we may believe it had an exiftence before we knew it, and may ftill continue to exift after our evidence is withdrawn and loft out of our memory.

I doubt not Mr. Monthly has passed many a night in found fleep, fince he did us the honour to take notice of us; for, confidering how much more than justice he has done our characters in the principal parts of them, he can have had nothing to difturb his reft upon that fcore. Then during all thefe naps, I fuppose he had no fense or knowledge of his own existence: but will he therefore fay, that he really had no exiftence? or that every time he fell alleep, he ceafed to be, was no Perfon, no Substance, no Being? but refumed all thefe again the moment he awoke in the morning? Therefore upon what grounds can he infer, that when he, and we, and all human

[27]

man palpable Individuals shall become stupified in the fleep of death, we shall utterly lose our existence, tho' we lose all evidence of it; and that a new set of corporeal organs (if such organs be necessary) may not invest and awaken us to a new scene of evidence?

What shall we fay of the houses, the trees, the fields we see around us? have they a knowledge of their existence? or do they therefore not exist at all? To draw this consequence, must drive us plumb into *Berkley*'s fcheme; that bodies subsist only in our idea, and are, or cease to be, according as our ideas fluctuate. So that when every body goes out of the room, the tables, the chairs, the pictures, they left behind, become instantly annihilated; and upon the company's return, become as instantly re-existent.

Notwithstanding all this, he will not deny that the mind or spirit of man may be an individual existence, to be destroyed only by the immediate exertion of Omnipotence. Yet in effect he does deny it a few lines below; for he fays, that by existence, in this case, must be meant an absolute and metaphysical existence; in which sense it is more than probable, there is no other Being in the universe but God: for while every thing in nature appears

D 2

to be in a conftant fluctuation and change, it is rational enough to fufpect, from analogy. that even the elements of things may be fo too. Now this reafoning feems to imply, that the fpirit of man is no more than a fifth element. like that called by Aristotle, Entelechia; for unless the mind be included in the elements, the argument from their fluctuation, that there is no created fubftance metaphyfically exifting, would not hold good : or that it is fomething analogous to the fpirit of brandy or hartfhorn, a drop of which being put into Tunbridge water, takes off the chill it would elfe cast upon weak stomachs; so a drop of the fpirit of man infufed into his material composition, takes off the insensibility naturally belonging to it, and renders it capable of fense and understanding. Yet it is plain, this drop may be divided into parts, which may one after another enter into the composition of the other elements: fo that what is now fpirit of man, may by and by become a drop of water, a puff of air; a spark of fire, or a speck of earth.

If this be fo, I fee no reafon for calling in Omnipotence to deftroy the fpirit of man; for I suppose there are certain stated laws, I must not fay of nature, but, of the universe, operating

[29]

rating these fluctuations and changes of the elements. And that the changes must be gradual we may prefume from analogy; for tho' a dead dog may become a tree by being buried under it, it must putrify first, and be reduced to fomething which is neither animal nor vegetable substance, before it can be drawn up by the radical fibres of the tree. So the elements, during their passage into one another, must be no elements at all, neither earth, nor water, nor air, nor fire, nor *entelechia*, and confequently be non-existent; for palpable existence they have none, and other existence, we are told, belongs not to created things.

The refult of all this is, that ourfelves, and whatever we fee or handle, are made up of non-entities, than which nothing can be harder of digeftion; and if we can pronounce any thing, we may pronounce this abfolutely impoffible even to Omnipotence. I have heard indeed, that God created all things out of nothing, but I never knew it underftood thereby, that he employed Nothing as a material whereout to fabricate his worlds; or that he moulded and kneaded up a certain quantity of Nothing, as a baker kneads his dough, until it became Something. I know the Atheifts, *Lucretius* in particular, charge this idea of creation creation upon us, and take great pains to overthrow it; but they fight all the while with a fhadow; for no Theift ever entertained fuch a notion.

Another reprehension given us is for faying, that upon diffolution of the human body, there is not a Being loft out of Nature ; which expreffion, Out of Nature, is, it feems, fuch an egregious impropriety, as to deferve being ftigmatized with Italics. But we were unwaringly drawn thereinto by the example of other perfons before us : for we have heard of there being a God in Nature-of invisible Natures, perhaps more elegantly expressed by impalpable Natures-of the Nature of virtue, justice, government, and many other things which are not objects of physiological knowledge. And if we were led to talk like children, by converfing among other children, it had been kind in our Master to have instructed us how to fpeak with better propriety: for he might know well enough that our meaning was only to affert, that upon certain fubftances joining together in a compound, there is not a new Being added to the number upon composition, nor is one lost again out of the whole number upon feparation. Now how ought we to have expressed ourselves upon

[30]

on this occasion ? In short, it feems not very material whether we add Out of Nature, or omit it. If a billet be confumed in the fire, we suppose the parts of it are diffipated, but not annihilated : a few of them only remain palpable in the ashes, but whether the reft be in nature or out of nature 'tis no matter, fo they be existent somewhere; there will still be the fame number of parts as before difunion ; and the billet having no existence over and above, or diffinct from the parts, there will not be a Being loft upon its confumption. But we must correct our theory against another time, and adopt a new article of Faith, to wit, that a compound may confift of parts which had no existence in Nature before they entered into it; and the five elements themfelves, for we must reckon the Entelechia for one, be made up of a Materia prima, every where uniform, and capable of being formed into any of them indifferently, tho' there be no fuch thing in Nature as a Materia prima.

Yet we cannot help faying, it was a little ungenerous in Mr. *Monthly* to attack us in flank, while we were engaged with another enemy, againft whom our difposition was not improperly made : for they being as deficient in physiology as ourfelves, would not have denied

2

[322]]

nied the existence of atoms in nature; therefore we still humbly conceive it was with propriety with respect to them we urged, that after dispersion of the atoms, there must be as many Beings in nature, as there had been during their coalition in a man. And confequently, if Man has a Being and Personality of his own, distinct from all other Beings, and which would be lost out of Nature upon his annihilation, he cannot be such a compound of atoms.

But having driven them out of the field, and being now to deal with another kind of affistant, we may be allowed to change our difpofition according to the nature of the attack.----But hold : we shall be chid again : for Attack is not a phyfiological Being, and there may be great impropriety in applying the term Nature to it. Well then, according to the manner of the For atoms, it feems, there are none, attack. and the principles of physical Beings have not existence in nature, until formed into compounds. Let us try then how we can manage our argument by help of phyfical Beings alone : and in fo doing, our example of the regiment may still ferve our purpose. For the men are admitted on both fides to be fubftances, whether palpable or metaphyfical, whether individual

vidual or compound, 'tis all one; for though we love hair-fplitting as well as most folks, where neceffary, we fee no use for it here: Substances they still are, distinct and independent on one another. If then there were fix hundred of them dispersed about the country, they did not, upon being incorporated into ten Companies and one Regiment, become fix hundred and eleven substances: nor will the King, upon disbanding them, lose a fingle Subject, or Substance, or Being, out of his dominion. For furely disbanding is not annihilating, nor can you conceive any Existence or Substance belonging to the Regiment annihilated fo long as the men remain all alive.

Now, to apply this to man: if he be a compound, yet we are not obliged to go fo far as to the primary principles whereof his elements are conftituted, for then we shall wander out of Nature; but we may distribute his whole composition into parts still remaining palpable, as his arms, his legs, his heart, his brain; fuppose twenty of them. These twenty parts then are so many several Beings, numerically and substantially distinct from each other in the composition; for the leg is not the arm, nor the brain the heart, even in a living man. So that he is nothing more than

2

a Regiment or collection of these twenty parts, having no distinct Being of his own which might be added to theirs to make the whole number twenty-one. And if they were separated by diffection, though they would lose their vitality, they would not lose their substance, but there would still remain twenty substances, as many as could be counted in the whole composition, nor would a single Being be lost out of Nature.

[34]

Therefore if a man, while poffeffing his fenfes and underftanding, has undoubted evidence of his own existence and perfonality diffinct from all other Beings, and adds one to the number of those existent, he cannot be a compound or collection of substances, but an individual, making some one particular part of the composition whereinto he enters.

This brings us to the examination of what is properly a Man's Self, or that whereto the perfonal pronouns *I*, You, He, and She, may be applied. And here perhaps at first there may be thought to be no difficulty; for upon a man coming into the room, my eyes may inform me fufficiently of his perfon, and I may fee plainly enough that he is not the table, the chairs, nor the wainfcot furrounding him. Very well: let us try then what I can difcover

by

by my eyes. Why, I fee a -face, a pair of hands, a coat, flockings, and floes: are all thefe You?--- No to be fure : You know well enough I pull off my coat and fhoes when I go to bed, and put on banyan and flippers in the morning. ---- Well, but you don't pull ' off your hair and nails when you go to bed : then they are parts of You .---- No, no: they are only excrescencies; for they have no fense or feeling .---- How fo? If any body was to tear off a parcel of your hair, or one of your nails, should not you feel a grievous smart? ----Ay, the pronoun I should, because they are fastened to my flesh; but the hair and the nails would feel nothing. They are like a packthread wound round my wrift, which if any one should twitch violently, he would hurt the wrift, but he would not hurt the packthread, ---- So then what has fenfe and feeling only is Yourfelf .---- Undoubtedly : and every thing that has fo is a part of Myfelf.----What think you of your teeth, your bones, your fat, the humours in your glands? for alterations may happen in them without your feeling it.----I don't know what to fay to that: for in common acceptation every thing is reputed Myself that remains with me after I have pulled off all my cloaths, except the excrescencies. E 2

crescencies .---- Ay, and the excrescencies too sometimes : for we often describe a man's perfon by the colour of his hair; and should do by his nails, if they have any thing remarkable or diffinguifhing; nay, by his cloaths, if we think he has but one fuit to wear. So you fee the term Self, like other terms of common acceptation, is fluctuating, determined this way or that by the prefent occasion : for he that, upon his knife flipping while he carves a loin of mutton, is asked whether he has cut himfelf, may fay, No, 'tis only a piece of my nail; but if he dashes the gravy upon his coat, he will be apt to fret at having greafed himfelf. But what do you take to be truly and properly Yourfelf ?---- I doubt I must give up the bones, the fat, and the humours: but furely my fyftem of nerves, and organs of fense, must be My[elf; for the great Mr. Monthly pronounces, that without them I could not have knowledge of my perfonality, or, in other words, could not exift .---- But then it is the nerves and organs jointly that make Yourfelf. Your eyes are not You, nor your ears, nor your brachial or crural nerves; but the whole composition of them altogether is that whereto the pronoun You belongs .---- So it should feem .----- Sup-pose an English soldier has lost a leg in Germany,

many, may he afterwards fay, I was born in ble compound born, to which the pronoun I was then applicable, is now no more, being destroyed by subtraction of the nerves in the leg.---Oh! but it is still a part of the fame compound.-Remember what you faid before, that it was not your eye, nor your ear, but the whole composition which was Yourfelf.-But it is rational enough to imagine from analogy, that compounds may fluctuate and change into one another, fo that what was a Self with two legs may become a Self with only one. -May be fo: but then it is not the fame Self; for the term Self belonging to the whole composition, it is plain the present composition wants a part which was an ingredient helping to complete the former .---- You puzzle me now. I wish Mr. Monthly were here: I warrant he would manage yon with a wet finger. And yet I cannot help thinking the man was the fame Self after lofing his leg as before, and might apply the pronoun I to whatever was done or fuffered by the two-legged Self.-----Take care. For if the Self remains entire after lofs of the leg, then it will follow that the leg, while in vital union with the body, was no conftituent part of the palpable fubftance I; becaufe

because this fuffers no diminution by the amputation. But we will not prefs this, because you have not your champion by to help you out.

Therefore let us take the compound before fluctuation, while the man has all his limbs and fenfes entire .- In this flate I suppose the whole composition, not any part, nor any number of parts lefs than all, is You : fo that what the composition does, you do; and, vice versa, whatever is done by you is done by the whole composition.----You are right.----Pray do you hear me fpeak ?-----Why fhould you afk ? have not I anfwered you all along ?-----I am not fure of that : Something has heard and anfwered me all along very clearly : but I am in fome doubt whether that was You ; becaufe it feems to me not to have been your. whole composition. Did your eyes hear any thing of what I faid ?---- They helped to understand you, by observing your gestures, and motion of your lips .---- Probably they might: But had your nofe or the nerves of your legs or arms any fhare in the hearing ?-------There was no occafion : for I have ears good enough to perform the office of hearing without other aid.---So your ears, or if you please to add eyes, have performed the whole office

office of hearing and understanding; and I have been talking all this while, not with your whole composition, nor with You, but with a pair of eyes and ears .---- Pshaw! now you joke with me. And let me tell you, this does not fit fo eafy upon you, nor appear fo little forced as your argument. Can any body deny that what my ears hear is my hearing ?--- I deny or affirm nothing; I only afk, whether what your eyes fee, and your ears hear, is feen and heard by your whole composition ?---- I think it is. I am fure it is feen and heard by Myself : for I have no notion of one Self to fee, another to hear, another to fmell, and fo on; nor of half Myfelf feeing when the other half does not. But to my thinking a perception received at any one part runs through the whole Self, the whole composition.--Does it fo? When you look at a picture, does the fight of it run down to your great toe ? and when fomebody treads upon your toe, do your eyes instantly feel a fympathetic fmart?-I am fure it is the fame I, the fame Self, that fee the one and feel the other.----Then if you have but one Self to ferve you upon all occafions, and this Self cannot perceive by halves, must it not be fomething diftinct from the nerves and organs, which alternately remain infenfible of one another's

other's perceptions? And is it not rational enough to fufpect, that these organs are only channels of conveyance transmitting their refpective notices; as windows transmit the light, to the fame Self, the whole of which perceives every thing that is perceived ?-----O! for Mr. Monthly again, to stand by and fee my head broke! But supposing it were to; may not this Self be still a compound ?----- I am afraid we shall hardly be able to make a palpable individual compound of it : fo we have loft our existence already; for nothing it seems exists that is not fo, nor is there any thing individual unless compounds. Nor do I much care: for, fo we can find pleafure in one another's company, it is no matter whether we find it with existence or without. But what do you take this compound to be ?---- Truly, I don't very well know : but fuppofe it to lie fomewhere in the brain. We are told the nerves have been traced to the pineal gland : perhaps there may be a drop of the fifth element; or fpirit of man, gathered there; and then that is the Self whereto the perfonal pronouns belong.---

E 40]

Do you apprehend yourfelf to be a real Being, or only a dream, a mere fancy or imagination? I cannot doubt of my existence, fo long as

[41]

as I have my fenfes. ---- The having your fenses depends upon your having fensitive organs, which we have now agreed are no parts of you, therefore are feparable from you. But upon fuch feparation should you lofe your Being, becaufe you loft the knowledge or confcioufnels of it ?---- No, provided the drop remained entire. Suppose the drop, without being ever diffipated, should get into the pineal gland of another human body, should you regain your knowledge and confcioufnefs? ---- I should know I had a Being, but not that I was the fame Being and Perfon I am now, becaufe probably I might not remember any thing paffing with me now. -----Well, but tho' you might not know it, fhould you not really be the fame Perfon and Being ? -----Certainly: for the drop being Me, while that remains the fame, I must be the fame .----So the Being and Substance of the drop are your Being, which you undoubtedly know you poffels, while you have your fenfes.---- They are-And the materials of the drop are your materials .---- Yes .---- Do you and the drop make two Beings? ---- No : both are one and the fame. ---- So while the whole drop continues to fubfift, you fubfift.---- I do.-----But the drop may be divided into two half drops .- Ay, and those again into infinite parts; F

parts; for Matter is divifible ad infinitum.-----With all your divisions, can you ever reduce it to nothing ? ----- I do not pretend that.----- Is there not the fame fubftance or quantity of matter in the two halves as there was in the whole drop ?--- To be fure.--- And after their being divided into infinite parts, is there not ftill the fame quantity among them all ?-----I agree it.----Then none of your fubftance being loft, you still continue to subfift, notwithstanding an infinite diffipation of your parts. ----- My Substance does ; but not Me.-----Why fo? Are you any thing elfe than; the fubstance whereof you confist? ---- Yes, the union of it into a compound is neceffary to my fubfistence.----Is Union a fubstance ?-----I never faid it was.---Can it make a fubftance ?--- It may make that to be one which was many before.---- Is that one any addition to the number there was before union, or has it any other exiftence befides or over and above theirs ? ----

It does not to the number of fubftances, but it has an existence besides theirs.—— How do you make that out? —— Because, in common propriety of speech, we apply existence to the composition distinct from the substances compounded. — In what instances, pray? — Some people deny there is any such thing as a circle cxisting

[42]

existing in nature; for what appears fuch, they fay, is only a Polygon whofe angles are imperceptible. Now when they fay this, they do not mean to deny the existence of the bodies feeming to be circular : and if they admit the existence of squares and triangles, these are different ideas from that of the fubftances exifting in them.-Different ideas they may be without being different existencies: for compofition may still be no more than a particular mode of exifting in fubftances, upon their coming into union from being difperfed. And it is not neceffary that upon their being caft out of a triangle into a fquare there fhould be an exiftence loft and gained, but only that they change their manner of existence, which whether in fquare or triangle is still their existence, not that of any thing elfe .---- Still, in my apprehenfion, when a thiftle grows out of the ground, there is a plant in being which was not existent before.----Well, if you make a difficulty, we do not love contesting where it is needless. We will fuppofe Composition to have an existence diftinct from the fubftances compounded. Thank ye, for your indulgence. Tho' I am afraid you would not grant it, if you thought it would do me any good.----It could do you no good to deny it. Upon this fuppofition there will arife a new queftion, What is pro-F 2 perly

perly You, and your Existence? for you know you have one of fome fort or other: whether it be the existence of your composition with that of your fubstance jointly, or the former alone abstracted from the latter. ____ Stay; I must think a little: this is not a matter to be determined prefently .---- Nay, if you are not clear, never stand to puzzle your brains about it. For whichever way we take it, our argument will run the fame: fo we will try with the Composition, confidered apart from the materials united by it. - Take your own way. fince you fay both will conduct to the fame point.----Lay down a brafs quadrant upon the table : I fuppofe you will allow it has a compolition exifting diffinctly from all other compofitions.----Very readily.----Place another equal quadrant of filver by it. Has not that a composition of its own existing too? ----- Certainly .---- Does it deftroy the composition of the other ?----How can it affect that, only by being laid fide by fide by it ?----Put two other quadrants of feel and copper against the former: Have not the four fo many diftinct compolitions exifting in them ?---- No doubt they have.-But all together make a compleat circle .--- True .---- Has not this circle a compofition too? ---- Undoubtedly .---- Is the com-pofition

-

position of the circle any thing elfe than an aggregate of the four compositions in the quadrants?----Nothing elfe, that I know of. ----Now let us return to the human body. Has not your right leg a composition of its own distinct from that of your left ?---- It has. ----- And your right arm another ?--- Yes.-----And your nofe another ?---- To be fure.----And every part of your human frame a separate composition of its own.----I cannot deny it .--- But we difcovered before, that the parts I have named were no parts of Yourfelf.----We must not retract that :---- So your existence lies in the composition of the drop or spirit of man lodged in your pineal gland.----It does. -----Which drop may be divided into two halves. ____ It may. ____ And each of these halves into three hundred fubdivisions .--- Ay, fo many at leaft .---- And matter being divisible ad infinitum, each of these fubdivisions are compounds having a composition existing in them diftinct from all the reft .---- Admit that they have,----Then is the composition of the drop, which is You, any thing elfe than the aggregate of the fix hundred compositions in the fubdivisions ?---- It must be fo : Plato. thou reasonest well.----So now we are come to the regiment again. This plaguy troublefome

fome foe purfues us to whatever quarter we can turn, and drives us to a conceflion, that we have no better title to existence than itself; and it appears in all lights that you have no diftinct Being of your own, being nothing more than a regiment or collection of infinite fubstances or existencies; and upon the disbanding of them, tho' you ceafe to be, yet there is not a Being, a Compound, a Composition, loft out of the universe.-----Yet for all that I can-not help thinking, that upon my ceafing to be, there must be one Being the fewer in the univerfe: fo I shall suppose, that fo long as the fubstance composing me fubfists; however difperfed or diffipated, I shall subfift i die man

But this will avail us little : for bare existence without perception is of no-value; and when the particles fall out of their union and intercourse with one another, they cannot form a perceptive compound. ---- That's a great comfort, no doubt .: But fuppoling any of them could fee, or hear, or feel, while you fubfift, and they continue to be parts of you, tho' difperfed to great diftances ; fhould you be infenfible of their perceptions? ----- Suppoling that, I must be affected with what affects any of them : but this an impoffible fuppofition, becaufe they cannot perceive unlefs in 3

[47]

in composition. ---- But after being decompounded they may come into composition again .---- Poffibly they may .---- The elements perpetually fluctuate and change: fo what is now spirit of man, may become spirit of brandy, and in further process of time may become spirit of man again, either in one compofition, or interfperfed among feveral drops gathered in feveral pineal glands .---- I can-not deny the poffibility of this. ---- Then in this flate of composition they will all be perceptive, but probably have very different and contrary perceptions; fome feeing while others do not fee, fome being in pleafure while others are in pain. And as you must be affected with whatever affects them, you must then have thefe contrary perceptions at the fame time, and enjoy pleafure while you fuffer pain. I can't tell how to come into this notion tho', that I may fee and not fee, be in pleafure and pain at the fame inftant.

You know the almighty power of Chance, and how in the courfe of infinite ages the must produce all possible combinations. Now one possible combination is this; that fome thousands of years hence half your drop and half mine should join in one pineal gland, and the other halves in some other pineal gland. Will

[48]

Will thefe two compounds be Perfons having knowledge of their own existence ?--- I make no doubt of it .---- Will they be diffinct and different perfons from one another ?-----Certainly.----Which of them will be one of us? ---- Neither.---- Do not we fubfift fo long as our fubstances fubfist; and shall not we perceive whatever they or any parts of them perceive ?-----We agreed fo just now; not in liking to the hypothesis, but because drove out of every other .---- Shall we have any other fubstance, or existence, or perception, than what belongs to those two Persons ?----- And yet I can never bring myself to believe that I can become another Perfon, or part of another Perfon, or perceive by his perceptions, much lefs by the perceptions of two.

So long as you continue alive, I fuppofe, you are the fame Perfon you were fome years ago. You can agree to this without being drove out of all other hypothefes.— Very readily. Nobody can doubt that.— The fame Being, Existence, or individual Substance.— Certainly. And the fame individual Compound too. — Do not the humours of our body continually fluctuate and change, being first fecreted from the blood, then entering into the fubstance of our flesh, and afterwards flying

[49]:

off by perspiration ?---- One cannot be ignorant of this, without great deficiency in phyfiological knowledge. Is it not rational enough to fuspect from analogy, that the spirit of man (if it be a fifth element, or material fluid) fluctuates in like manner; being first fecreted from the animal spirits, then turning to the medullary fubstance of the brain, and afterwards flying off by perspiration ?-- Truly there is a fhrewd fuspicion of fuch analogy .--And as the particles of this fluid are detached, others flow in to fupply their places; fo that there may not be one particle the fame that was there fome time ago : but what is now fpirit of man in you, once was blood, or chyle, or victuals you have eaten, and perhaps a twelvemonth hence may be vapour floating about in the air; yet You continuing all the while the fame fubstance and perfon .- I don't know how to difprove all this .--- Then if -You are a real Being and Substance, and are not barely a form or mode of existence in fomething elfe, and if your Existence and Perfonality remains the fame throughout all the ftages of life, from infancy to extreme old age, notwithstanding all the changes of particles in your drop; may we not argue, as we did before, concerning the nerves and the organs, that

that they are no parts of You, but channels to convey perception to fomething elfe, which is numerically and fubftantially Yourfelf? Well, I'll fay no more, but turn you over to my champion.

Thus which ever way we turn ourfelves, we find nothing but abfurdity and contradiction, fo long as we place our existence and perfonality in a compound : nor can we escape them otherwife than by admitting an Individual, not one of your compound individuals, which is none at all except in idea, but an Individual truly fuch, confifting of no parts; that cannot either totally or partially become another fubstance, nor can lose its identity unless by annihilation ; in which cafe there would be a Being absolutely loft out of Nature, that is, out of the number of Beings existent. Into whatever composition this Individual enters, we efteem it Ourselves for the time, notwithstanding any fluctuation of its parts; provided they fall into the fame connection, and ferve the fame uses their predecessors had done before.

According to the form and texture of thefe compositions, we conceive physical Beings denominated : fo we are orthodox in this article of physiological faith. But we are reproved for

for mifapplying the term Man to a part of him; because we observe, that no man can doubt of his own existence, and a little after place that existence in the mind, which is an individual that can be divefted of its Being by no power lefs than that which gave it. What then? has not the Man fuch a Being if his mind has it? May not we fay a Man has a fresh colour, because he has it only in his cheeks; but none in his arms or his back? So the difpute turns upon a point of language rather than of phyfiology. For furely nobody, can understand us to imagine-that when Rice. was hanged, he was not divefted of his Manhood, or did not ceafe to be a Man. The fole question is, Whether the term Man may, upon any occafion, be applied to either of his parts after their feparation. Suppose his body had been hung upon a gibbet in the little green near Stamford-bill, if on going along the road in dusk of evening with a friend, as my eyes. are not very good, I should ask, Pray what is that flicks up in the middle of the common? Is it a tree ? And he fhould anfwer, No :- it is a Man hanging in chains. Would he be guilty, of false language in his answer? Or suppose I ask Whitefield what he thinks is become of him : and he tells me, " Such a wicked Man, ." not G 2 ć .

-

" not having received abfolution from me, to " be fure is gone to the Devil." Must we call this an impropriety of expression, meerly becaufe we are pretty fure the Devil has not got both parts of the palpable Individual yet? With regard to Agency, we hold as appears by Note (b) on page 31, that in every human action the mind acts upon fome corporeal organ or inftrument, and having many of them under command, the can by employing them respectively affect things external, as when we take up a book; or the body, as when we wipe our face; or herfelf, as when we recollect fome past occurrence. All which actions are ordinarily afcribed to the Man ; for we fay the Man thinks, the Man wipes his face, or the Man takes up a book. But if the term Man belongs only to the palpable compound, it must include the whole of it, and cannot be applied to the mind even together with fome of the limbs and organs exclusive of the reft : fo that the Man neither walks, nor writes, because in the former his hands ... perhaps hang dangling by his fide ; in the latter, his legs, like a couple of lazy curs, fit doing nothing under the table. If we are to be held to this rigorous phyfiological dialect, perhaps no Man ever did a fingle thing in all his

his life; becaufe it would be difficult to affign any action whereto fome parts of his composition were not wholly useles and unconcurrent.

As to the adverb alternately, I don't recollect where we have employed it: but if we have, I fee no great harm done. Poffibly Mr. Monthly takes a pipe fometimes, while fitting, like Fate, over the new-born babes of literature, to fpin their future fortunes in the temple of fame. He whiffs and thinks, and thinks and whiffs again. In this cafe, might not we fay the Man acts alternately. Sometimes upon his mouth to draw fmoke into it, and fometimes upon his Pericranium to raife ideas there, now and then a little fmoky too? or should we fay the mind acts upon the pectoral and guttural muscles, they act upon the fuming weed in the tube, the exudations of that stimulate the fenfory nerves in his palate, these communicate their motion to the brain, which acts upon the mind again, by raifing up judicious observations for her to contemplate? Would this learned stile tend more to the entertainment and edification of our readers?

If our language, in all these particulars, has been incorrect, it will be good-natured in him to fet us right. In the mean time, as a man that makes aukward bows muft go on with his aukwardnefs until his dancing-mafter can teach him to perform more genteely; fo we may hope for indulgence in our vulgarity of expression, until our Master shall instruct us to deliver ourselves with better grace and elegance.

54 1

We have fpent many more words in our defence than were employed in the attack : but it is always the cafe, that lefs trouble is requifite to puzzle a caufe than to clear it up, and a man may make more tangles in a fine fkain of thread in a minute, than he can undo again in an hour. We did not undertake it for the fake of our own credit, which has been much more raifed than depreffed by the labours of our good coufin Mr. Monthly Comment, who has faid to many handfome things of us, that it would be vanity to repeat them; and a few freedoms ought not to be taken amils, as they flow an impartiality, that adds weight to what has been faid in our favour. It is common to fee two council fight like dog and bear at the bar, without thinking the worfe of one another all the while ; their ftrenuousness encourages clients. So our making a little noife with one another may turn to mutual

tual account; it may ferve, like the marketbell, to awaken the curiofity of cuftomers, and quicken the fale of both our wares. This benefit, if it accrues, we shall be heartily glad of, in gratitude for the high encomiums bestowed on us; yet we own it will be purely accidental: for what raifed our follicitude. was the doctrine advanced, of the mind and material elements fluctuating and changing into one another; which feemed a revival, tho' we are willing to believe it was not intended as fuch, of the old atheistical notion, that a perceptive and active Being might be formed of inert and fenfeless principles. This feemed a matter of importance to us, well deferving our ferious care and endeavours to prevent; and engaged us to a replication, which upon all other accounts we should have judged needlefs.

FINIS.

that theorem is may forve, like the condectbill, in arafter the diricity of a mere. will quitten the file (I' with our wary. I his bener, if whether, we thall be beauty gielt ol, in grannale für the high ence In accident 1: für will und 1 and in a stille i o svibooir. die d'aut materi l ciemere sint vonteri. in in its propher of the the we tread the set of the set of and the the sit to all the labour Le intervojante a tal. forme' of fost ship had to ' onrol formed a survey of the menute a benneed delervisie out le viele paire de la y - a gue and chieve been go dailen As Deservised for the

['23.]

JIMIE







Rebach dunlary Left the UN. D.



